ESSENTIAL QUESTIONS AND ANSWERS

ON THE GOSPEL OF THE KINGDOM

SELECTIONS II

- BREAK THE SHACKLES AND RUN
- RED RE-EDUCATION AT HOME
- MY DREAM OF THE HEAVENLY KINGDOM
- PERILOUS IS THE ROAD TO THE HEAVENLY KINGDOM
- STAY OUT OF MY BUSINESS
- THE MOMENT OF CHANGE
- THE LIES OF COMMUNISM
- BREAK THE SPELL
- WHO IS MY LORD
- AND MORE

Table of Contents

Preface

I. Questions and Answers on the Way of the Lord's Arrival (Secret and Open)

Question 1: You bear witness that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus. This is impossible! "Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory" (Mat 24:29–30). If the Lord really had returned, He should have done so with great glory while descending upon a cloud. Moreover, heaven and earth would have quaked, and the sun and moon would have stopped shining. So far such sights have not manifested, so how can they say the Lord has already returned? Just what exactly is all this about?

Question 2: We have long heard that the Church of Almighty God has already testified to the return of the Lord Jesus. And He is Almighty God! He expresses truths and performs His judgment work of the last days, but the majority of people in religious circles all believe that the Lord will return by descending with the clouds. This is because the Lord Jesus clearly said: "And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory" (Mat 24:30). The Book of Revelation also prophesied: "Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him" (Rev 1:7). I also maintain the belief that the Lord will return by descending with the clouds to directly take us up into the kingdom of heaven. We refuse to accept the Lord Jesus who does not descend with the clouds. You say that the Lord's return is returning to the flesh and descending in secret. But nobody knows

about this. However, the Lord openly descending with the clouds is absolute! That's why we are waiting for the Lord to descend with the clouds and appear openly to take us directly up into the kingdom of heaven. Is our understanding correct or not?

Question 3: It was prophesied in the Bible: “You men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven” (Act 1:11). After the Lord Jesus resurrected, it was His spiritual body that rose up into the sky. When the Lord returns, it should be His spiritual body that descends on a cloud. However, you testify that God has become flesh—the Son of man—again to do judgment work in the last days. This is obviously inconsistent with the Bible. The pastors and elders often say that any testimony about the Lord’s coming as incarnate is false. So I think that it is impossible for the Lord to return as incarnate. I cannot accept your testimony. I will just wait for the Lord to descend on a cloud and bring us to the kingdom of heaven. This cannot be wrong for sure!

II. Questions and Answers on Rapture

Question 1: You witness that the Lord Jesus has returned, and that He has appeared and worked in China, I believe that it is true because this is what the Lord Jesus had prophesied in the Bible: “For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even to the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be” (Mat 24:27). But we think that the Lord will return in the last days to bring us into the kingdom of heaven, or at least He should lift us to the clouds to meet with Him in the air. Just as Paul said in the Bible, “Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord” (1Ts 4:17). But why hasn't the Lord come as described in the Bible? What does Almighty God's judgment work in the last days have to do with us being brought into the kingdom of heaven?

Question 2: It’s that the Lord Jesus once said: “I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also” (Jhn 14:2–3). The Lord Jesus was resurrected and returned to heaven to prepare a place for us, so that means the place He prepared should be

in heaven. If the Lord has returned, it should be to rapture us into heaven, to first lift us up into the sky to meet with the Lord. What you're bearing witness to now is that the Lord Jesus has returned, that He has become flesh and is on the earth speaking and working. So how is He going to lift us up to the kingdom of heaven? Is the kingdom of heaven on earth, or is it in heaven?

III. Questions and Answers on How to Discern the Voice of God

Question: The Lord Jesus said, "My sheep hear my voice" (Jhn 10:27). The Lord returns to utter words to call to His sheep. The key thing in our waiting for the coming of the Lord is to seek to hear the voice of the Lord. But now, our greatest difficulty is that we don't know how we should listen for the Lord's voice. We also are not able to distinguish between what is God's voice, and what is man's voice. Please fellowship with us about how to be certain once and for all of the Lord's voice.

IV. Questions and Answers on the Conditions for Entering the Kingdom of Heaven

Question 1: We have believed in the Lord for so many years. Although we can preach and work for the Lord and suffer a lot, we can still always lie, deceive and defraud. Every day, we speak in defense of ourselves. So often, we are arrogant, opinionated, ostentatious, and condescending to others. We live under the situation of sinning and repenting, unable to escape the binding of the flesh, let alone experience and practice the Lord's word. We haven't lived out any reality of the Lord's word. In our case, can we be brought into the kingdom of heaven at all? Some people say, no matter how we sin, how we are bound by the flesh, the Lord sees us as sinless. They go by Paul's word: "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (1Co 15:52). And assume that the Lord will instantly change our form when He comes and bring us into the kingdom of heaven. Some people believe that those who receive salvation by faith but still constantly sin are unqualified to enter the kingdom of heaven. It is mainly based on God's word: "Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven"

(Mat 7:21). "… you shall therefore be holy, for I am holy" (Lev 11:45). These are two competing viewpoints that no one can say clearly, please communicate for us.

Question 2: Having believed in the Lord for so many years, we have always felt that as long as one can practice humility, tolerance and love brothers and sisters, and can follow the example of Paul by expending and laboring for the Lord, he is following the way of the Lord, and he will be raptured into the kingdom of heaven when the Lord returns. Just as Paul said, "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness" (2Ti 4:7–8). But you have witnessed that when we believe in the Lord, we must receive the judgment work of Almighty God in the last days. When we receive cleansing, we will be commended by God and admitted in the kingdom of heaven. I have a question: We believe in the Lord for so many years, and we expend and labor for the Lord; can we enter the kingdom of heaven without receiving the judgment work of Almighty God in the last days?

Question 3: We've believed in the Lord for so many years, and we've maintained His name. We often read the Bible, pray and confess our sins to the Lord; we are humble, patient, loving toward others. We often do charity, donate, and sacrifice everything else to work for the Lord and spread the gospel to witness Him. Are we not practicing the Lord's words and following His way? How can you say we never had any reality of faith in the Lord or are an unbeliever? In the Bible, Paul said, "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness" (2Ti 4:7–8). Therefore, I think that our faith in the Lord will obtain His praise. When the Lord arrives, He will definitely rapture us into the kingdom of heaven.

V. Questions and Answers on the Inside Story of the Bible

Question 1: "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" (2Ti 3:16), Paul's words are in the Bible. Therefore, they were inspired by God; they are God's words. Believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible. Regardless of the denomination, if it strays from the Bible, it's heresy! We believe in the Lord, so we must always act according to the Bible, that is to say, we must keep the words of the Bible. The Bible is

Christianity's canon, the foundation of our faith. Leaving the Bible is not believing in the Lord; if we leave the Bible, how can we believe in the Lord? The Lord's words are written in the Bible. Is there anywhere else where we can find His words? If our faith in the Lord is not based on the Bible, then what is it based on?

Question 2: Paul made it very clear in (2Ti 3:16) "the entire Bible is inspired by God", so that all words in the Bible are God's words, and that the Bible represents God, We are going by Paul's words. How can this be wrong?

Question 3: We think all of God's word and work are recorded in the Bible. There's no word and work of God apart from the Bible. Therefore, our faith in God must be based on the Bible. Is that wrong?

Question 4: You have testified that the incarnate Almighty God has expressed millions of words and performed His work of judgment beginning from the house of God. This clearly exceeds the Bible. The pastors and leaders used to often tell us that all of God's word and work is in the Bible. There is no word and work of God outside of the Bible. The salvation work of the Lord Jesus has already been completed. The Lord's return in the last days will be to take believers directly up into the kingdom of heaven. So all along, we've believed that belief in the Lord must be based on the Bible. As long as we stick to the Bible we will be able to enter the kingdom of heaven and receive eternal life. Moving away from the Bible is leaving the Lord's way. It's resisting Him and betraying Him. What could be wrong with that?

Question 5: Paul made it very clear in 2 Timothy that "the entire Bible is inspired by God" (2Ti 3:16), This means that every word in the Bible is the word of God, and that the Bible represents the Lord. Believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible. Believing in the Bible is believing in the Lord. Moving away from the Bible means not believing in the Lord! Our belief in the Lord only requires us to hold firm to the Bible. Even if we do not accept Almighty God's work in the last days, we'll still be able to be saved and enter the kingdom of heaven. Is there anything wrong with this understanding?

Question 6: You communicate the Bible is the Bible, God is God. I understand that the Bible cannot represent God at all. But just what is

the relationship between the Bible and God? I still don't get it.

Question 7: You testify that the Lord Jesus has already arrived and He is Almighty God. and that He has expressed many truths and is doing the work of judgment of the last days. Is that true? I think this is impossible. We've always maintained that the words and work of God are recorded in the Bible, and that the words and work of God do not exist outside of the Bible. We believe that the Bible already contains the fullness of God's salvation, the Bible represents God. As long as one adheres to the Bible, he will enter into the kingdom of heaven. The Bible already contains the fullness of God's salvation, the Bible represents God. Our belief in the Lord is based on the Bible, straying from the Bible constitutes a denial and betrayal of the Lord! Is there anything wrong with this understanding?

Question 8: For 2,000 years, the religious world has upheld the belief that "the Bible is given by inspiration of God, that it is all God's word", so the Bible represents the Lord. Those who deny that the Bible is given by inspiration of God and is His word will definitely be condemned and labeled as heretics by the religious world. Is my understanding of this wrong?

Question 9: The Bible is a testimony to the Lord, and the foundation of our faith. These two thousand years, all the believers have based their faith on the Bible. So I believe that the Bible represents the Lord. Believing in the Lord means believing in the Bible, believing in the Bible means believing in the Lord. No matter what, we cannot stray from the Bible. How are we supposed to practice faith without the Bible? Could that even be called faith in the Lord? Tell me, what's wrong with practicing faith in this way?

VI. Questions and Answers on God's Work of Judgment in the Last Days

Question 1: You bear witness that the Lord Jesus has returned as none other than Almighty God who has expressed the truth in doing judgment work in the last days. How could it be possible? The Lord will actually come to bring us into the kingdom of heaven, how could He leave us behind to do judgment work in the last days? I think by believing in the Lord Jesus and receiving the Holy Spirit's work, we have already been experiencing God's judgment work. There is proof in the Lord Jesus' word: "if I go not away, the Comforter will not

come to you; but if I depart, I will send him to you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment" (Jhn 16:7–8). We think that after the Lord Jesus resurrected and ascended to heaven, at Pentecost the Holy Spirit descended to work on people. That had already made people blame themselves for their sins, for righteousness and judgment. When we confess and repent before the Lord, we are actually experiencing the judgment of the Lord. the work of the Lord Jesus was redemption work, after the Lord Jesus ascended to heaven, the work done by the Holy Spirit who descended at Pentecost should be the judgment work of God in the last days. Had it not been the judgment work, how could it be "he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment"? Besides, as believers of the Lord, we are often touched, reprimanded and disciplined by the Holy Spirit. So, in front of the Lord, we are always crying and repenting to the Lord. The many good behaviors engendered are how we have been transformed by our faith in the Lord. Is it not the result of experiencing God's judgment? The judgment work of Almighty God in the last days that you talk about, how does it differ from the work of the Lord Jesus?

Question 2: You have witnessed the Lord Jesus has returned to express the truth and do judgment work in the last days. Why didn't I see it? I just believe that the Lord will return on the clouds; I just believe that when the Lord returns, all those who believe in Him will be instantly changed and be lifted in the air to meet with the Lord. Just as Paul said, "For our conversation is in heaven; from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like to his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things to himself" (Phl 3:20–21). And you say the Lord's return is to become flesh, appear as the Son of man and express the truth to do judgment work in the last days. I think it's impossible! Since God is omnipotent, a single word of God created the heavens and earth and all things, and let the dead rise again. God can turn us into holiness with one word. Why does God have to become flesh to express the truth to do the work of judging and cleansing man?

Question 3: During church meetings, the pastor and elder frequently say that the Lord Jesus saying on the cross "It is finished" proves that

the work of saving mankind was finished, that simply by believing in the Lord Jesus and confessing our sins before Him, we are forgiven of sin, and the Lord would no longer see us as sinners. We are justified by faith alone, saved by grace. The Lord will receive us into the kingdom of heaven when He returns, and will not possibly return to do further work of saving mankind. I feel that this understanding by the pastor and elder is not acceptable. Yet, ultimately what was the Lord Jesus referring to, when He said on the cross, "It is finished"? Why does God need to come back in the last days to express truth, and do the work of judging and purifying man?

Question 4: We've read Almighty God's words and have seen that there are some things that are very harsh. They are judgment of mankind, and condemnation and curse. I think that if God judges and curses people, won't they be condemned and punished? How can it be said that this kind of judgment is to purify and save mankind?

VII. Questions and Answers on the Truth of Incarnation

Question 1: You bear witness to the fact that the Lord Jesus has returned and has been incarnated to do His work. This I just don't understand. We all know that the Lord Jesus was the incarnation of God. Having completed His work, He was crucified and then resurrected, appearing before all His disciples and He ascended into heaven in His glorious spiritual body. Just as the Bible says: "You men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven" (Act 1:11). So, biblical scripture confirms that when the Lord comes again, it will be His resurrected spiritual body appearing to us. In the last days, why is God incarnated in the fleshly form of the Son of man to do the work of judgment? What is the difference between the resurrected spiritual body of the Lord Jesus and His incarnation as the Son of man?

Question 2: Having listened to your fellowship and testimony these days, it is clear to me that the second coming of the Lord in the last days is the incarnation here to do the work of judgment. But we don't understand the truth of the incarnation and so are easily deceived by the rumors and falsities of the CCP government and the pastors and elders of the religious world. As a result, we will treat God incarnate as

merely a man and even resist and blaspheme Him. Thus, I wish to ask you about the truth of the incarnation. What is the incarnation? What is the difference between the incarnate Christ and the prophets and apostles used by God?

Question 3: The Lord Jesus in whom we believe is God's incarnation. The Lord Jesus did God's work of redemption, no one dares deny this, but this Almighty God in whom you believe is not necessarily God's incarnation, because there is no record of Almighty God in the Bible. So then, the pastors and elders of the religious world all say He in whom you believe is merely a man, that you've been fooled. Only the Lord Jesus, in whom we believe, is Christ, is God's Son!

Question 4: You testify that, in outward appearance, God's incarnation looks just like an ordinary person, just like the Lord Jesus Himself, He not only possesses normal humanity, but also has divinity. This much is certain. What is the difference between the normal humanity of God's incarnation and that of corrupt man?

Question 5: In the Age of Grace God was incarnated to become the sin offering and take on the burden of man's sin. This all accords to reason. In the Age of Grace God was incarnated to become the sin offering and take on the burden of man's sin. This all accords to reason. The Lord Jesus was conceived by the Holy Spirit and became the Son of man to redeem mankind in His sinless body. Only in so doing was Satan humiliated. In the last days, God has been incarnated as the Son of man again to do the work of judgment. We have seen this to be fact. What I want to ask is this. God's two incarnations are slightly different, the first was in Judea, and the second is in China. Now, why is it that God has to be incarnated twice to do the work of saving mankind? What is the true significance of God's two incarnations?

Question 6: The Bible states that after the Lord Jesus was baptized, the heaven was opened, and the Holy Spirit descended upon the Lord Jesus like a dove, a voice said: "This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased" (Mat 3:17). And we believers all acknowledge that the Lord Jesus is Christ, the Son of God. Yet you've testified that the incarnate Christ is the appearance of God, is God Himself, that the Lord Jesus is God Himself and Almighty God is also God Himself.

This differs from our previous understanding. So is the incarnate Christ God Himself or God's Son? Both situations seem reasonable to us, and both accord with the Bible. So which understanding is correct?

Question 7: If the Lord Jesus is God Himself, then why is it that when the Lord Jesus prays, He still prays to God the Father? There is certainly a mystery here to unfold. Please commune for us.

VIII. Questions and Answers on Dissecting the Essence of the Pharisees

Question 1: You've testified that when the Lord returns in the last days, He will first become flesh and arrive in secret, and after making a group of overcomers, publicly descend with the clouds to appear before all people. Such a communication makes sense. But for 2,000 years, most believers in the Lord have all been waiting for Him to descend with the clouds. Religious pastors and elders also often say so. How could we possibly be wrong by waiting in accordance with the Bible's prophecy? This is definitely impossible!

Question 2: That pastors and elders are all chosen and ordained by the Lord, and that they are all people who serve the Lord. Obeying pastors and elders is obeying the Lord. If we resist and condemn pastors and elders, then we are resisting the Lord. Besides, Only pastors and elders understand the Bible and can interpret the Bible. Only they can shepherd us. As long as what pastors and elders say conforms with the Bible and has a basis in the Bible, we should comply and obey. As long as what pastors and elders do conforms with the Bible, we should accept and follow. How could that be wrong?

Question 3: Paul clearly said in the Bible: "Take heed therefore to yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost has made you overseers, to feed the church of God …" (Act 20:28). This proves that pastors and elders are all anointed by the Holy Spirit. Doesn't being anointed by the Holy Spirit represent being anointed by God? God anointed pastors and elders as overseers to all the flock. That can't be wrong!

Question 4: Pastors in religious circles are all familiar with the Bible. They often interpret the Bible in churches and exalt the Bible. We've always thought that they should be people who know God. Then why has the work of God incarnate in the last days been furiously condemned and resisted by the majority of pastors in the religious

world? I believe what the majority of pastors and leaders in the religious community condemn can't possibly be the true way!

Question 5: Upon learning that we had accepted Almighty God, the pastor and elder have been ceaselessly bothering us, explaining the Bible to us nonstop. Though we refute them, and reject them, they do not let up. This is severe harassment of citizens. In the past, when we were weak or negative, they were never so diligent. Now, as soon as we accept Almighty God, however, they have become very angry, using both carrot and stick, endlessly annoying us. It seems that this evil of theirs won't let up until they have dragged us into hell with them! I just don't understand it. The pastor and elder, as persons who serve the Lord, and who often talk of the Bible, they should be able to see that all words expressed by Almighty God are truth. Why do they not seek truth? Why don't they investigate the last-days work of Almighty God, instead of wildly condemning, resisting, and blaspheming Almighty God? The pastor and elder expend such effort to obstruct our acceptance of Almighty God. We really do need to understand. Please fellowship this a bit with us.

Question 6: The CCP is an atheist party, a demonic group that is most hostile to God and the truth. The demon is the personification of Satan. The reincarnation of Satan and evil spirits is demon, the sworn enemy of God. Therefore, when God appears in the flesh and works in China in the last days, the insane suppression and persecution He encounters from the CCP government, it is inevitable. But the majority of the pastors and elders in the religious community are servants of God who are familiar with the Bible. Not only do they not seek and study Almighty God's work in the last days, they judge, condemn and frantically resist instead. This is incredible! It is not surprising that the CCP government condemns God's work. Why do the religious pastors and elders resist and condemn God's work too?

IX. Questions and Answers on Why the True Way Is Subject to Persecution

Question 1: In the Bible, Paul says we should obey those in authority. If we put Paul's words into practice, then we should always listen to the ruling regime. But the atheistic CCP is always persecuting religious people and acting as an enemy of God. Not only does the

CCP forbid us from believing in the Lord, it also captures and persecutes those who spread God's gospel. If we obey it and do not believe in the Lord or spread His gospel, then aren't we siding with Satan in resistance and betrayal of the Lord? Won't we then become those who are destined to perish? I really don't understand this. When it comes to how we treat the ruling authority, what should we do to ensure we're in accordance with God's will?

Question 2: The elders and pastors found out you've been witnessing Almighty God to us. They've been going around spreading heresies and lies and condemning Almighty God. They sealed off the church and have started harassing and stopping our brothers and sisters that try to hear your sermons. They see us as the thorns in their eyes, the most hated of all. They're also saying that all those that accept Almighty God will be expelled from the church. The church has clearly split into two factions. Some of the brothers and sisters want to study the true way with us. Others are following the pastors and elders in resisting and condemning the Eastern Lightning. They also treat us as their enemies. Why has the church changed that much in just a few days?

Question 3: Since we started to study the work of Almighty God in the last days, the religious pastors and elders have been condemning Almighty God more frantically, doing all they could to block us from studying the true way. It is no different from how the Jewish Pharisees resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus! I have been pondering, why did God twice appear in the flesh to work and twice encounter the collective condemnation and persecution of the religious community and atheist government? In the last days, Almighty God appears and works merely to express the truth by speaking and working for the cleansing and salvation of mankind. Why are the religious community and the Chinese Communist government so rancorous against Christ that they even mobilize the media corp and armed police forces to condemn, blaspheme, round up and exterminate Christ? When King Herod heard that the King of Jews, that is, the Lord Jesus was born, he ordered for the slaughter of all male infants under the age of two in Bethlehem. He would rather execute thousands of innocent babies than spare Christ. When God came in the flesh for the salvation of mankind, why didn't the religious community and government

welcome His arrival but frantically condemned and blasphemed God’s appearance and work? Why did they deplete the resources of the whole country to crucify Christ on the cross at any cost? Why is mankind so evil and so rancorously against God?

X. Questions and Answers on the Way of Eternal Life

Question 1: The Bible is a testimony to God's work, it has been of inestimable benefit to mankind. Through reading the Bible, we come to understand that God is the Creator of all things, we come to see the wondrous and mighty deeds, and omnipotence of God. Since the Bible is a record of God's word and man's testimony to God, then why can one not receive eternal life from reading the Bible? Is there no way of eternal life in the Bible?

Question 2: We believe, by putting our faith in and following the Lord, we can attain eternal life. The Lord’s word backs this up: The Lord Jesus said, “I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whoever lives and believes in me shall never die” (Jhn 11:25–26). “But whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life” (Jhn 4:14). These passages are the Lord Jesus' promise. The Lord Jesus can grant us eternal life, the way of the Lord Jesus is the way of eternal life. And the Bible says, “He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God stays on him” (Jhn 3:36). Is the Lord Jesus not the Son of man, is He not Christ? We could gain the way of eternal life by faith in the Lord. But you testify that Christ of the last days will bring us the way of eternal life. I don’t quite understand this, we are all followers of the Lord Jesus Christ. Why is this not enough to attain the way of eternal life? So why do we also have to accept the words and work of Christ of the last days?

XI. Exposing and Refuting the Rumors and Falsehoods of the CCP

Question 1: You have only believed in God for a little more than a decade. You are still a rookie. I have lived the better part of my life and studied religions for decades. I can tell you responsibly, there is no God in this world, and there has never been any Savior. The whole affair of believing in God is too vague. It is completely impractical.

We are both knowledgeable people; we should look at matters according to the facts and science. We should believe in scientific theories such as materialism and Darwinism. Why do you have to believe in God? We communists only believe in atheism and the theory of evolution. You need to know that Darwin's theory of evolution is one of the most important scientific theories in the history of science for mankind. According to the theory of evolution, we can be sure that everything was created by the work of nature. Man is the accidental product of nature's biological evolution process. Man had evolved from the ape. This has a sufficient theoretical basis. This shows that man was not created by God. The words written in the Bible are myths and legends that cannot be taken seriously. I advise you to learn more about materialism and Darwinism. These are very practical theories that can resolve doubts. I believe that when you see it clearly, you will have a correct understanding of religious beliefs and come out from the illusory faith. Only by following the CCP will you have a future.

Question 2: I haven’t seen God, haven’t seen how God works and how He dominates the world. It is hard for me to recognize God and accept God. From my study of religious beliefs for so many years, I think that religious belief is merely a spiritual sustenance and a means to fill the spiritual vacuity of mankind. Didn't all those who believed in God finally die? No one saw which person went to heaven or hell. I see all religious beliefs as very vague and unrealistic. With scientific development and human progress, religious beliefs will likely be abandoned and eliminated. We still need to believe in science. Only science is the truth and reality, which no one can deny. Although science has not denied God, it has not witnessed the existence of God either. If science can really determine that there is God and witness that God dominates everything, then we will believe in God too. We communists just believe in science. Only by believing in science and developing science will human societies continue to progress. Science can solve many real problems of human societies. What can believing in God bring to people? Other than some temporary spiritual comfort, what else is it good for? It does not solve any practical problems. So, believing in science is more realistic than believing in God, much more realistic. We have to believe in science.

Question 3: I hear that many pastors and elders of the religious community say that who you believe in is a man and not Jesus Christ. Yet you witness that this man is the returned Lord Jesus, that is, Almighty God appearing at work. Do you know that the Communist Party has long condemned Christianity and Catholicism as cults? And you dare to witness that the Lord Jesus has returned, that is Almighty God; aren't you bucking the head wind? How can the Communist Party spare you? The Communist Party even dares to designate Christianity and Catholicism as cults, and the Bible as a cultist book. This is an open fact. Don't you know that? If the CCP dares to condemn and deny the world's orthodox religions, why couldn't it condemn Almighty God's appearance and work? When the CCP could designate the Bible as a cultist book, why would it spare The Word Appears in the Flesh? The public security agencies have confiscated many copies of this book. Many people are studying it. I just don't understand it. Why do you people have to believe in Almighty God? Why insist on witnessing that Almighty God is Christ of the last days? We understand everything about His family background. He is an ordinary person, just like Jesus that Christianity believes in. Jesus, the son of a carpenter, had parents and siblings. He was just an ordinary man. Yet the entire Christendom worships Jesus like God. Almighty God that you people believe in is also a man like Jesus. You insist on saying that He is God, this is quite inexplicable. You endured so much persecution and pain for believing in an ordinary man. Is it worth it? I hear that there are many people who gave up their families and careers to follow Almighty God. I doubt what you can ultimately get from believing in God like this? What is the basis for you to believe that He is God?

Question 4: Although the One you believe in is Almighty God, what you read is the word of Almighty God, and how you pray is in the name of Almighty God, according to what we know, your Church of Almighty God was founded by a man whom you obey in everything. According to your testimonies, this man is a priest, a person used by God in charge of all administrative matters. I am puzzled by it. Who was the one that founded The Church of Almighty God? How was it begotten? Can you clarify it?

Question 5: The Bible says, "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are

ordained of God. Whoever therefore resists the power, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation" (Rom 13:1–2). Having believed in the Lord for many years, you should understand the meaning of this statement. The Bible was inspired by God after all. I believe that we believers of the Lord should obey those in office and power. I don't know how you receive it. It doesn't work in China if you defy the authorities. The Communist Party is a revolutionary party. If you disobey, it will revoke your life. To believe in the Lord in China, one must accept the Communist Party's United Front and join the Three-Self Church. There is no other way out! You see, there are many believers of the Lord in the Three-Self Church who are loving and pious also. Can you say that they do not truly believe in the Lord? Those of you who believe in Almighty God insist on spreading the gospel and witnessing for God regardless of how the Communist Party persecutes and arrests you. Even when you are kept in prison, you still stand up to witness for the Lord and refuse to be Judas. Honestly speaking, this is what I admire about you. Conversely, talking about what we seek in our belief in the Lord, isn't it all about our desire for a harmonious family and a peaceful life? Look at how prudent we people of the Three-Self Church are. We are a patriotic and church-loving organization that glorifies God and benefits the people. We neither offend the ruling authorities nor betray the Bible. We can openly worship the Lord in church without having to hide in fear. Isn't this the best of both worlds?

Question 6: How do you explain the May 28 Zhaoyuan case of Shandong that has shocked the country and the world? This case was heard in open court after all! After the occurrence of the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong, the government has stepped up its crackdown on house churches, even using the armed police forces to crack down on The Church of Almighty God by conducting overwhelming carpet search-and-arrest of The Church of Almighty God members. Although people have raised numerous doubts about the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong, believing it was a false case fabricated by the CCP to generate public opinions to support its crackdown on The Church of Almighty God, the Chinese media have publicly reported the case regardless of whether the facts are true or false. This has generated some impacts in various countries in the world. No matter how you

deny the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong, many people still believe the Communist Party. So I want to hear what you think of the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong.

Question 7: The CCP is a revolutionary party. What it believes in is mendacity and violence, that is, seizing power with violence! Going by the CCP's logic, "A lie will become the truth if it's repeated ten thousand times." No matter how many people doubt its word, deny and disbelieve it, the CCP doesn't care a whit, and it continues to lie and deceive just the same. As long as the immediate effects and its goals can be achieved, it doesn't care about the costs! If people rebel against it and march in protest, it will use tanks and machine guns to solve it all. When necessary, it will use the atomic bombs and missiles to counter hostile forces. The CCP can resort to any means to maintain its rule. As soon as the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong was publicly announced, the CCP started massive deployment of armed police units to suppress and arrest Christians at all costs. Who could stop it? Who dared to resist? Even when foreigners were able to see through the CCP's fraud, what could they do? The CCP has many ways to counter the condemnation of Western democratic forces. It uses money to settle everything. As the saying goes, "Who receives a gift sells his liberty." Fewer and fewer countries are condemning the CCP now. Hostile forces to the CCP are afraid to sound off. No matter how you put it, the CCP is still able to uphold its rule. As long as the Communist Party holds on to power, you believers of God can never expect to be free! God's appearance and work in China will definitely be detested and banned by the CCP. Whether the CCP can achieve the goal of establishing an atheistic domain in China or not, it will never stop arresting and suppressing you! I saw this clearly long ago. That's why I vigorously oppose your believing in Almighty God. It is all for your sake, don't you understand?

Question 8: What you said about going to hell for resisting God, I don't believe it. Who has seen where hell is? What does hell look like? I don't even know if God exists at all. I don't recognize that God exists. Where is God after all? Who has seen God? If Almighty God is the true God, when the CCP so desperately condemns and attacks Almighty God, why hasn't God annihilated it? If God reveals His omnipotence and destroys the Communist Party, then He is the true

God. That way, mankind as a whole must acknowledge that Almighty God is the true God, even the CCP will have to prostrate and worship the true God. Who would dare to resist God? But what actually happened? What I saw was the CCP police arresting believers of God everywhere. Many of God's believers were thrown into prison, tortured and maimed. Many of them were killed. However, did your God save them? How can this make one believe that the God you believe in is true? I cannot understand you at all. Is the God you believe in true or false? I am afraid that you don't even know. In that case, aren't you being foolish? What is your basis in saying that the God you believe in is the true God? Can you explain it clearly?

Question 9: I see the government's documents say, like some people who believe in Jesus, those who believe in Almighty God abandon their families in order to preach the gospel. Some people don't even get married for a lifetime. The documents also say that the government wants to detain a group of people who believe in Almighty God and kill another group. Killing them means nothing. There is something else like "Troops won't be withdrawn …" right, "until the ban is done." Many believers of Almighty God were arrested, imprisoned, wounded and crippled by the CCP. Some people even lost their jobs and their families were ruined. This has drawn a lot of criticism that people who believe in God do not want their families. Do you say this is true? You can't abandon your family or give up marriage. If this is how you really believe in God, advises you not to believe in Almighty God, okay?

Question 10: I have been working for the United Front for many years, and I have studied various religious beliefs. Christianity, Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy are all orthodox religions that believe in Jesus. But your belief in Almighty God is so different. According to CCP documents, The Church of Almighty God does not belong to Christianity at all. You are preaching the gospel to various sects under the banner of Christianity that don't recognize you as a Christian denomination. So I will never allow you to believe in Almighty God. You can only believe in Christianity if you want. The government's persecution will be lighter this way. If you get arrested and incarcerated for believing in Almighty God, your life will be in danger. The CCP has already seen that all those who believe in Almighty God

are invariably followers of Christ in the last days who are Christ's disciples and apostles. What the CCP fears most is the proclamations and testimonies of the book The Word Appears in the Flesh expressed by Christ in the last days, as well as this die-hard group that follows Christ in the last days. We have studied the history of Christianity. What Judaism and the Roman Empire feared most were the disciples and apostles of Jesus. So when these people were captured, they were executed by different methods of capital punishments. Today, if measures are not taken to suppress and completely ban this group of people who follow Christ of the last days, in less than a few years, they will subsume the entire religious community. At present, several main Christian factions in China have already been subsumed by The Church of Almighty God. The CCP is very clear about this. Had the CCP not fabricated some public opinions and contrived the Zhaoyuan Case, perhaps the day will come when the religious community of the world would be subsumed by The Church of Almighty God. Once The Church of Almighty God subsumes the entire religious community, it will be very unfavorable to the rule of the CCP. Therefore, the Central Committee made a strong determination to deploy all available forces to thoroughly ban The Church of Almighty God in a short period. You need to know, the emergence of Eastern Lightning not only took China by storm, it also made a big splash in the world. Since you made such a big move, how can the CCP not frantically launch a wholesale suppression and arrest campaign against you? If you must believe in God, you can only believe in Christianity. You are absolutely forbidden to believe in Almighty God. The Church of Almighty God does not belong to Christianity, don't you know that?

Question 11: You witness that both Jesus and Almighty God are Christ, the first and the last Christ. Our CCP does not recognize it. In The Internationale, it clearly said, "There has never been any savior of the world." You insist on witnessing the advent of Christ the Savior. How can the CCP not condemn you? In our opinion, the Jesus whom Christians believe in was an ordinary man. He was even nailed on the cross. Even Judaism did not recognize Him as Christ. The incarnate Almighty God in the last days that you witness is also an ordinary person in fact. The CCP's documents describe it clearly that He has a surname and first name. This is also a fact. Why do you witness that

such an ordinary person is Christ, the appearance of God? It is really incredible! No matter how you witness what truth has been expressed and how judgment work in the last days has been done by Almighty God, our CCP will not recognize that this person is God. I think you are just like those people of Christianity, Catholicism, and Eastern Orthodoxy who believe in Jesus, believing in a man as God. Isn't it ignorant? What exactly is God and the appearance and work of God? Does it mean that the mere expression of the truth and doing the work of God are the appearance of the true God? This is what we will never accept. If God can perform miracles and wonders, destroy the CCP and all those who resist Him, then we will recognize Him as the true God. If God appears in the sky, makes a thunderous roar that frightens the entire human race, that is the appearance of God. Then our CCP will recognize Him. Otherwise, the CCP will never acknowledge there is God.

Question 12: According to the government's propaganda materials, The Church of Almighty God was founded by someone named Zhao in northeastern China. This man is the high priest of The Church of Almighty God. He is leading the Church. Believers of The Church of Almighty God claim that he is someone used by the Holy Spirit. They often listen to the preaching of this person who is used by the Holy Spirit, and they listen to him in the administrative work of the church. Although you believers of Almighty God read the word of Almighty God, pray in the name of Almighty God, regard The Word Appears in the Flesh expressed by Almighty God as canonical doctrine, and communicate the word of Almighty God in your congregation, in any case, this person is the one who has the final say in The Church of Almighty God. So we are certain that The Church of Almighty God was created by this person. Both the CCP and the religious community characterize The Church of Almighty God as an organization of man. I think it is true. Do you understand this?

Question 13: All of you believe in God; I believe in Marx and Lenin. My specialty is research of various religious beliefs. Through many years of research, I have discovered a problem. All religious belief holds that there is a God. Yet of all the people who believe in God, none has ever seen God. Their belief is based solely on their own feelings. I therefore have reached a conclusion about religious belief:

Religious belief is purely imaginary; it is superstition, and has no basis in science. Modern society is a society in which science is highly developed. Everything must be based on science in order for there to be no mistakes. We Communist Party members believe in Marxism-Leninism. We don't believe that there is a God. How does The Internationale go? "There has never been any Savior of the world, nor deities, nor emperors on which to depend. To create humankind's happiness, we must entirely depend on ourselves!" The Internationale clearly states "There has never been any Savior of the world." The reason that the human race in the past believed in God and practiced superstition is mainly because human beings at that time, facing such phenomena of the natural world as the sun, moon, and stars; wind, rain, thunder, and lightning, had no way to produce a scientific explanation. Hence, fear and wonder arose in their minds about supernatural powers. Thus the earliest concepts of religion were formed. Also, when humans could not solve such difficulties as natural disasters, and disease, they hoped to attain spiritual comfort through respectfully making obeisance to God. This is how religion came into being. Obviously, this was not rational, and it was not scientific! Nowadays, the human race has advanced, and science is flourishing. In such fields as the aerospace industry, biotechnology, genetic engineering, and medicine, the human race has made considerable progress. In the past, human beings did not understand, and had no way to solve many problems. Nowadays these problems can all be explained through science, and science can be relied on to provide solutions. In this age of developed science and technology, if people still believe in God, is this not foolish and ignorant? Wouldn't such people be left behind by this age? The only practical thing is for us to believe in science.

Question 14: In your belief in God, you all have your own ideas and opinions. It seems to me that your ideas and theories are feelings of subjective consciousness, and are of the illusory category of things. We Communists believe that materialism and the theory of evolution are truth, because they are in accord with science. Our country comprehensively provides materialist, evolutionist education from elementary school through university. Why is this? It is to imbue all young people and teenagers with atheist and evolutionist thinking from

an early age, so that they all stay away from religion, and stay away from superstition, and so that they can scientifically and rationally explain all questions. Take, for example, the question of the origin of life. People in the past were ignorant and backward, and believed such stories as Pangu separating heaven and earth, and Nüwa making humans. As for Westerners, they believe that God created the human race. In fact, all of these are mythology and legend, and are not in accord with science at all. Ever since the appearance of the theory of evolution that explained the origin of the human race clearly, how humans evolved from apes, the theory of evolution has thoroughly invalidated the legends of God creating man. All things have evolved naturally. This is the only truth. Therefore we must believe in science, and in the theory of evolution. You are all educated, knowledgeable people. How can you go and believe in God? Would you be able to chat about your views?

Question 15: National leaders have labeled Christianity and Catholicism as cults, and labeled the Holy Bible as a cult book. These are generally acknowledged facts. As to why central government has labeled Christian house churches, and in particular The Church of Almighty God as cults, as my understanding and research inform me, I consider it to be like this: All who testify that God created all things, who testify that God is the Creator, that God created mankind, who testify that God rules over everything, and testify that God is the Lord of the universe, and controls the universe, and would have the human race revere only God, submit to God, and worship God, all these are cults. All who testify that God is righteous, holy, and great, who bear witness to God's love and salvation of the human race, who condemn Satan as the devil who corrupts the human race, and as an evil force that rules the world, especially who directly attack and condemn the Communist Party, all these are cults. All who testify that the Lord Jesus has returned, who bear witness for Christ incarnate, and talk of the words and work of an ordinary human as if it were the appearance and work of the Savior, and also publicize and testify that all of the words expressed by Christ are truth, calling upon the human race to accept God, to turn toward God, and to submit to God, and who do not yield to the Communist Party, all these are cults. All who testify that the words of God are truth, and higher than everything, who testify

that the Holy Bible is God's word and that The Word Appears in the Flesh is truth, and do their utmost to eliminate and condemn Marxism-Leninism and the ideology and theory of the Communist Party, all these are cults. All who teach about and bear witness for Christ of the last days, who preach that God has returned, making all of the human race accept God's salvation, and who call upon people to abandon everything and follow God as the only way to get into the kingdom of heaven, all these are cults. This is my understanding of the central government's labeling all Christian house churches, in particular The Church of Almighty God, as cults. Do all of you know what a cult is by now? In China, the Communist Party is in control. The Communist Party is a Marxist-Leninist, atheist political party that opposes all theism. The Communist Party declares guilty as cults all religious groups that believe in God. This demonstrates the absolute authority of the Communist Party. Only the Communist Party is great, glorious, and correct. Anything that goes against or is hostile toward Marxism-Leninism is wrong; it is something that the Communist Party wants to ban. In China, it is necessary to esteem Marxism-Leninism and the Communist Party as great. Could it be that there is something wrong with this? You of The Church of Almighty God openly spread that Jesus has returned, and is none other than Christ of the last days, Almighty God. You also testify that Almighty God expresses truth to purify people, to save people, and that the kingdom of heaven has already arrived on earth. This has resulted in shaking up and dividing religious circles, leading to millions of people turning toward Almighty God. This has caused a giant sensation in China, and has brought severe confusion and unrest to society. In so doing, aren't you disturbing public order? The central government therefore declares The Church of Almighty God guilty of being a cult, and implements severe attack and suppression. You are all deceived and have gone astray. The government hopes that you waste no time in repenting, distancing yourselves from The Church of Almighty God, and joining the Three-Self Church. In this way, the government will no longer hold you criminally responsible.

Question 16: You say that Almighty God is the appearance of God in the last days, and is the true way. You also say that it was God who created this world, and who rules over what happens in this world, that

it is God's work that has guided and saved people all along. What basis in fact do you have for saying this? We Communist Party members are atheists, and do not recognize God's existence or God's sovereignty in the least. Even less do we recognize the appearance and work of God incarnate of which you talk. The Jesus in whom Christianity believes is clearly a person. He had parents, and had siblings. Christianity, however, absolutely requires that He be treated as Christ, and be worshiped as God. This is utterly inconceivable. Almighty God in whom you believe is just like Jesus, clearly just an ordinary person. Why must you obstinately insist that He is God incarnate? Why must you bear witness that He is Christ Savior of the last days in person? Isn't this terribly foolish and ignorant? There is no such thing in this world as God. Even less does there exist a God as God incarnate. You obstinately say that an ordinary person is God incarnate. What is the basis of this? Are you all able to express the grounds and basis of your belief?

Question 17: You bear witness that Almighty God is God of the last days appearing and working, and you say that your belief in Almighty God is seeking truth, and walking the correct path of life. From what I know, however, many of the people who believe in Almighty God are like those missionaries of Jesus, who for the purpose of spreading the gospel and bearing God's witness, did not hesitate to abandon family and career, and gave body and soul for God. Among them there are many young people who don't get married, all doing their duty in following Christ of the last days. What I am saying is all true, isn't it? Perhaps you are not aware that, because of you leaving family and work to spread the gospel and bear God’s witness, there are ever greater numbers of people who believe in God. If the whole human race turned toward God, who would still believe in the Communist Party, and follow the Communist Party? Precisely because of this, the government suppresses and arrests you. Can there be anything wrong with this? Mainly it is because you believe in God in this way that so many people have been arrested and sentenced to jail, and that so many people have to leave home and flee. So many husbands and wives have divorced, and so many children have no parents to love them. There are so many elders who have no one to care for them. By believing in God this way, you have caused your families to suffer

such hardship. What are you trying to achieve? Could it be that this is the very correct path for human life of which you talk? Our traditional Chinese culture attaches most importance to filial piety. The saying goes: “Of all virtues filial piety is most important.” Confucius said: “While your parents are alive, don't travel far away.” Showing respect to parents is the foundation of human conduct. Believing in God, and following God the way that you do, unable to care for even the parents who gave you life and nurtured you, how can this be considered a correct path for human life? I often hear people say that believers are all good people. This is not false. But all of you believe in God, worship God, and venerate God as great. This has caused the Communist Party to burn with anger, and to be full of hatred. You do your duty to spread the gospel, yet you can’t even take care of your own families. How can this be considered good conduct? What do you say, could it be that even this does not show that you have taken a wrong path in belief in God? By spreading the gospel and bearing God’s witness in this way, aren’t you destroying the harmony and stability of society? I plead with you to not persist in error. You should return to society as soon as possible, reunite with your families, live normal lives, and take care of your families well. You should do your duties as children and as parents. Only this is the foundation for human conduct; only this is the most practical.

Preface

The Church of Almighty God's screening of one film after another bearing witness to God's work in the last days has given rise to a resounding response from God's chosen people, and has rocked various religions and denominations. There are currently many people who are watching and investigating. Mankind has already started to awaken through God's words—His words will guide all of mankind, and His words will accomplish all things. This is adequate proof that bearing witness to God and His work through the medium of film has successfully borne fruit. So that God's chosen people may more quickly understand the truth and enter into reality, and may exalt God and bear witness to Him, and so that all those who long for God's appearance may better investigate the true way, the editorial team from The Church of Almighty God has put together "Classic Questions and Answers on the Gospel of the Kingdom." Critical questions and answers from these films that are related to the truth are excerpted in this book. These quintessential answers all come from the experience and understanding of the truth held by God's chosen people. It can be said that they come from the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, and are entirely in line with the truth. Not only can this book resolve all issues and notions that those who seek and investigate the true way may hold, but it is also a wonderful piece of reference material for God's chosen people to equip themselves with the truth and bear witness to God's work. Although these quintessential answers are of great help for people's pursuit and understanding of the truth, this of course does not mean that our understanding of the truth is complete. After all, our

experiences are still too superficial, and our understanding of the truth is limited. In front of the truth, all of us are eternally children, and the understanding that we share in fellowship can only be said to be in line with the truth. It absolutely cannot be called the truth, and it certainly cannot be equated with the words of God. It is our hope that all of God's chosen people approach this book correctly.

I. Questions and Answers on the Way of the Lord's Arrival (Secret and Open)

Question 1: You bear witness that Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus. This is impossible! "**Immediately after the tribulation of those days shall the sun be darkened, and the moon shall not give her light, and the stars shall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heavens shall be shaken: And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory**" (Mat 24:29–30). If the Lord really had returned, He should have done so with great glory while descending upon a cloud. Moreover, heaven and earth would have quaked, and the sun and moon would have stopped shining. So far such sights have not manifested, so how can they say the Lord has already returned? Just what exactly is all this about?

Answer: By waiting to welcome the Lord's return, we have all made the same mistake. We are only waiting for the Lord's return based on the prophecies of His descent upon a cloud, but we have overlooked other prophecies about the Lord's return. This is a grave mistake! Many parts of the Bible contain prophecies about the Lord's return. For example, the Lord's prophecies: "**Behold, I come as a thief**" (Rev 16:15). "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me**" (Rev 3:20). "**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many**

things, and be rejected of this generation" (Luk 17:24–25). These prophecies mention the Lord's returning "**as a thief,**" the coming of the Son of man; and they mention that He speaks to people while knocking at the door, and so on. Doesn't this show that when it comes to the Lord's return, besides His public descent upon a cloud, He also will descend in secret ways? If we believe the Lord will only come by descending upon a cloud, then how could the prophecies of Him coming in secret be fulfilled? Think about it. When the Lord descends on a cloud, there will be a number of great portents. The sun and moon will no longer shine, the stars will fall from the sky, and heaven and earth will shake. That will certainly be an earth-shaking scene, and everyone will definitely see it, and know about it. Then how will the prophecies be fulfilled that the Lord will come "**as a thief**", and that He will stand outside knocking on the door? When the Lord descends on a cloud, everyone will see it. Will anyone need to testify: "**The bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**"? The Lord also said: "**But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.**" How will that prophecy be fulfilled? Besides, There are also multiple prophecies in the Bible that when the Lord returns in the last days, He will complete some work. For example, the work of judgment will start with the house of God. He will open the scroll and break its seven seals, and there's also the harvesting and the winnowing, and the work of separating people according to their kind, such as separating the sheep from the goats, the wheat from the tares, the good servants from the evil servants. If the Lord comes in great glory, descending on a white cloud and everyone sees it, that would definitely be the spiritual body of the Lord Jesus resurrected appearing to all of

mankind, so wouldn't everyone fall to the ground and obey and follow Him? Who would resist Him? That way, how would the sheep and the goats, and the good servants and the evil servants be differentiated? How would the work of harvesting and winnowing be done? There are many prophecies in the Bible about the Lord's return in the last days. If we cast aside the other prophecies, but just delimit the way the Lord will return based on one or two parts of the Bible as Him descending on a white cloud, isn't that a little arbitrary? That way we would be likely to miss the chance to welcome His return, and likely to be rejected by Him.

The Bible prophesied that the Lord would come "**as a thief,**" "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). "**But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**" (Luk 17:25). The appearance and work of Almighty God have fulfilled these prophecies. From the outside, He looks just like a regular person. He speaks from within normal humanity. Who could imagine that He is the appearance and the work of the Lord? This does fulfill the prophecy of the Lord's return "as a thief." "**If therefore you shall not watch, I will come on you as a thief**" (Rev 3:3). This prophecy refers to Almighty God's appearance and work suddenly spreading to every sect and denomination, just like a thief—no one could have realized it. His preachers bear witness to His words to all those who seek God's appearance, and they patiently fellowship on Almighty God's words. This is the Lord knocking at the door. Since Almighty God's appearance and work, He has been continually subjected to the brutal hunts and persecution of the Chinese government, and He has suffered the mad resistance,

condemnation, and rejection of the religious world. There have even been many evil spirits and demons who have openly attacked, condemned, and blasphemed Almighty God online. This completely fulfills this prophecy spoken by the Lord: "**But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation.**" If the Lord had descended publicly on a cloud like people imagine, then the tares, the goats, the evil servants, and the antichrists would definitely fall down in worship to accept Almighty God. How would they be exposed then? I'm afraid that even the CCP demons and all the unbelievers would also accept Almighty God. Wouldn't that just be utter chaos in the world? How would God's work in the last days be carried out? So only if God is incarnated as the Son of man to appear and work can these prophecies spoken by the Lord Jesus, including those of the Lord's work after His return in the last days, be fulfilled, be completed. Almighty God has come and expressed all truths to purify and save mankind, and He is doing the work of judgment in the last days. His sheep listen to His voice, and wise virgins from every sect and denomination hear the words Almighty God has expressed and know them to be the truth, to be God's voice, and they have all turned toward Almighty God. This is the rapture. These people have been raptured up in front of God's throne, and undergo judgment and chastisement before Christ's judgment seat. They are first to be purified, made into overcomers by God, and become the first fruits. This fulfills this prophecy from Revelation: "**These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb wherever he goes. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and to the Lamb. And in their**

mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God" (Rev 14:4–5). After God descends in secret and makes this group of overcomers, His great work will be complete. After that, He will descend on a cloud and openly appear to all nations, to all peoples. That is when the great events of the Lord's return that you talk about will occur, and that will fulfill the prophecy in Revelation: "**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him**" (Rev 1:7). This will be the scene of the Lord openly descending on a cloud, and all eyes will be able to see Him. Even some of those who resisted and condemned Almighty God will be able to see Him descending on a cloud, which is why "**all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him.**" The prophecies of the Lord's return have basically all been fulfilled now. The only one left is the prophecies that He will openly descend on a cloud after the disaster.

Almighty God says, "**Many people may not care what I say, but I still want to tell every so-called saint who follows Jesus that, when you see Jesus descend from the heaven upon a white cloud with your own eyes, this will be the public appearance of the Sun of righteousness. Perhaps that will be a time of great excitement for you, yet you should know that the time when you witness Jesus descend from the heaven is also the time when you go down to hell to be punished. That will be the time of the end of God's management plan and it will be when God rewards the good and punishes the wicked. For the judgment of God will have ended before man sees signs, when there is only**

the expression of truth. Those who accept the truth and do not seek signs, and thus have been purified, shall have returned before the throne of God and entered the Creator's embrace. Only those who persist in the belief that 'The Jesus who does not ride upon a white cloud is a false Christ' shall be subjected to everlasting punishment, for they only believe in the Jesus who exhibits signs, but do not acknowledge the Jesus who proclaims severe judgment and releases the true way of life. And so it can only be that Jesus deals with them when He openly returns upon a white cloud. They are too stubborn, too confident in themselves, too arrogant. How could such degenerates be rewarded by Jesus? The return of Jesus is a great salvation for those who are capable of accepting the truth, but for those who are unable to accept the truth it is a sign of condemnation. You should choose your own path, and should not blaspheme against the Holy Spirit and reject the truth. You should not be an ignorant and arrogant person, but someone who obeys the guidance of the Holy Spirit and longs for and seeks the truth; only in this way will you benefit" ("By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Yearning

Question 2: We have long heard that the Church of Almighty God has already testified to the return of the Lord Jesus. And He is Almighty God! He expresses truths and performs His judgment work of the last days, but the majority of people in religious circles all believe that the Lord will return by descending with the clouds. This is because the Lord Jesus clearly said: "**And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory**" (Mat 24:30). The Book of Revelation also prophesied: "**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him**" (Rev 1:7). I also maintain the belief that the Lord will return by descending with the clouds to directly take us up into the kingdom of heaven. We refuse to accept the Lord Jesus who does not descend with the clouds. You say that the Lord's return is returning to the flesh and descending in secret. But nobody knows about this. However, the Lord openly descending with the clouds is absolute! That's why we are waiting for the Lord to descend with the clouds and appear openly to take us directly up into the kingdom of heaven. Is our understanding correct or not?

Answer: When it comes to waiting for the Lord to descend with the clouds, we must not rely on man's notions and imaginations! The Pharisees committed a huge mistake in waiting for the arrival of the Messiah. They precisely used man's notions and imaginations to measure the Lord Jesus who had already arrived. In the end, they nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. Is this not a fact? Is waiting for the Lord's arrival as simple as we think? If the Lord returns and works

among mankind like the way the Lord Jesus in the flesh had done, and we don't recognize Him, then would we also judge and condemn Him as the Pharisees had done and crucify Him once again? Is this a possibility? The Lord Jesus prophesied that He shall return and said many words about it, but you only hold on to the prophecy that the Lord will descend with the clouds and don't seek or investigate other more important prophecies spoken by the Lord. This makes it easy to walk down the wrong path and be abandoned by the Lord! There is actually not just the "**descend with the clouds**" prophecy in the Bible. There are also many prophecies like that the Lord will come as a thief and descend secretly. For instance, Revelation 16:15, "**Behold, I come as a thief.**" Matthew 25:6, "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him.**" And Revelation 3:20: "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me.**" All these prophecies refer to God becoming flesh as the Son of man and descending in secret. "**As a thief**" means coming quietly, secretly. People won't know He is God even if they see or hear Him, just as it was back when the Lord Jesus appeared and performed His work. From the outside, the Lord Jesus was just an ordinary Son of man and nobody knew He is God, which is why the Lord Jesus used "**as a thief**" as an analogy for the Son of man's appearance and work. This is too befitting! Those who do not love the truth, no matter how God in the flesh speaks or works, or how many truths He expresses, they do not accept. Instead, they treat God in the flesh as a normal person and condemn and abandon Him. That is why the Lord Jesus prophesied that when He returns: "**For**

as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation" (Luk 17:24–25). Based on the Lord's prophecy, His return shall be "the coming of the Son of man." "Son of man" refers to God in the flesh, not the spiritual body of the resurrected Lord Jesus descending with the clouds to openly appear before all people. Why is that the case? Let's think about it. If it were the spiritual body of the resurrected Lord Jesus descending publicly with the clouds, it would be incredibly powerful and shock the world. Everyone would drop to the ground and no one would dare resist. In that case, would the returned Lord Jesus still endure a lot of suffering and be rejected by this generation? Definitely not ! That is why the Lord Jesus prophesied that His return shall be "the coming of the Son of man" and "**as a thief.**" In actuality, it is referring to God incarnated as the Son of man arriving in secret.

So what is the relationship between the Son of man descending in secret to appear and perform His work and God openly appearing by descending with the clouds? What does this process involve? Let's communicate about that simply. In the last days, God is incarnated and descends secretly among men to utter and speak, performing the work of judgment beginning from the house of God, purifying and perfecting all those who hear His voice and return before His throne and making them into a group of overcomers. Then God brings about the great disaster, refining and chastising all those who don't accept God's judgment of the last days. Afterward, God shall descend with the clouds to openly appear before all men. That would then

completely fulfill the prophecy in Revelation 1:7: "**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him.**" when the Lord descends with the clouds, those who pierced Him can still see Him? Just who are the people who pierced Him? Some say it's those who nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. Is that really the case? Weren't the people who crucified the Lord Jesus cursed and destroyed by God long ago? In reality, those who pierced Him are those who, during the period in which God incarnate has descended in secret in the last days to work, do not seek God's voice and condemn and resist Almighty God. At that time, they will see the Almighty God that they have resisted and condemned is precisely the Savior Jesus they have been bitterly awaiting all these years. They shall beat their chests, weep and gnash their teeth, and their outcome can only be punishment. The Book of Revelation does not say whether such people live or die in the end, so we cannot possibly know. Only God knows. Only the wise virgins who hear God's voice can have the opportunity to welcome the return of the Lord, be brought before God's throne to attend the marriage supper of the Lamb, and be perfected by God into an overcomer. This fulfills the prophecy in Revelation: "**These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb wherever he goes. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and to the Lamb**" (Rev 14:4). As for those who only hold on to the notion that the Lord will descend with the clouds but don't seek and investigate God's work of the last days, they are considered the foolish virgins. Especially those who furiously resist and condemn

Almighty God, they are the Pharisees and antichrists exposed by God's work in the last days. They are all people who have re-crucified God. All these people shall fall into the great disasters and receive punishment. Therefore, just what mistake people who only welcome the Lord that descends with the clouds have committed, what type of people they are, and what their outcome will be, are obvious once we think about it.

Excerpted from the movie script of Break The Spell

Question 3: It was prophesied in the Bible: “You men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven” (Act 1:11). After the Lord Jesus resurrected, it was His spiritual body that rose up into the sky. When the Lord returns, it should be His spiritual body that descends on a cloud. However, you testify that God has become flesh—the Son of man—again to do judgment work in the last days. This is obviously inconsistent with the Bible. The pastors and elders often say that any testimony about the Lord’s coming as incarnate is false. So I think that it is impossible for the Lord to return as incarnate. I cannot accept your testimony. I will just wait for the Lord to descend on a cloud and bring us to the kingdom of heaven. This cannot be wrong for sure!

Answer: You say it is impossible that the Lord will return as incarnate, is that correct? It is explicitly written in the Bible that the Lord will return as incarnate. Do you mean that you couldn’t find it? There are many prophecies written in the Bible about the Lord’s return, of which the prophecies on the Lord’s return as incarnate are particularly explicit. For instance when the Lord Jesus said, “**For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even to the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**” (Mat 24:27). “**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**” (Luk 17:24–25). The Lord Jesus repeatedly prophesied that He would come again as the Son of man. The Son of man refers to God

incarnate, such as the Lord Jesus in the flesh who looks like an ordinary, normal person outwardly, who eats, drinks, sleeps and walks like a normal man. But the spiritual body of the Lord Jesus after He resurrected was different, which could penetrate walls, fade in and fade out. It was particularly supernatural. So He could not be called the Son of man. When prophesying about the Son of man's return, the Lord Jesus said, "**But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**" (Luk 17:25). But according to what you say, the Lord will return as a spiritual body descending on a cloud and appearing publicly in great glory, when all people must prostrate and worship, who would dare to resist and condemn Him? The Lord Jesus said, "**But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**" (Luk 17:25). How will these words be fulfilled? Only when God incarnate appears to work as the Son of man, when people do not recognize that He is Christ incarnate, would they dare to condemn and reject Christ according to their notions and imagination. Don't you say that is the case? In addition, the Lord Jesus also prophesied, "**But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only**" (Mat 24:36). "**If therefore you shall not watch, I will come on you as a thief, and you shall not know what hour I will come on you**" (Rev 3:3). If the Lord were to descend on a cloud in a spiritual body, then everyone would know about it and be able to see it. Yet the Lord Jesus prophesied when He shall return, it is "knows no man," "neither the Son" and "as a thief." How will these words be fulfilled? If the Lord Jesus were to appear in a spiritual body, how would He not know about it Himself? Only when God becomes flesh as the Son of man in the last days, becomes

an ordinary, normal person, will the words that the Son shall not know be fulfilled. Just as the Lord Jesus, before performing His ministry, even He did not know about His identity as Christ who came to fulfill the work of redemption. So, the Lord Jesus often prayed to God the Father. Until the Lord Jesus began to fulfill His ministry, it was then He realized His identity. Do you say that it is more practical to receive it this way? Now do you still dare to say that there is no prophecy in the Bible that the Lord will return in the flesh? This was the prophecy made by the Lord Jesus. Doesn't the "Son of man" refer to God incarnate? Some people feel that, if the Lord were to return in the flesh, why hadn't He said it directly? Why did He have to say the appearance of the "Son of man?" This is the nature of prophecies. Prophecies are implicit. Had it been said as appearance in the flesh, then it would have been plain language instead of prophecy. When perceptive people delve deeply into the meaning of the "Son of man," they will be enlightened, and they will realize that the meaning of the "Son of man" is incarnation. We only realized it when Almighty God came and revealed the mystery of incarnation. It turned out that the prophecy of the Bible "the coming of the Son of man" actually means incarnation. Since we are now certain that the Lord's return is in the flesh, how can we ascertain that He is the appearance of God in the flesh? For this, we need to be able to recognize the voice of God. If He were indeed the appearance of the Son of man in the flesh, He would be expressing a great deal of truth and be able to clearly explain the origin and purpose of God's appearance and work as well as to do a stage of specific work by expressing the truth. So, the incarnate Almighty God in the last days has expressed all the truths for the purification and salvation of

mankind and done the work of judgment beginning with the house of God. The word expressed by Almighty God is the spoken word of the Holy Spirit to the churches. God speaks through the flesh to knock on the doors of all those who long for His appearance. Those who perceive the word of Almighty God as the truth and the voice of God are the wise virgins who are brought before God to attend the wedding feast of the Lamb. They eat and drink the Holy Spirit's latest word every day, experience God's work in the last days, and absolutely verify that it is God's appearance and work in the last days. So they begin to testify to various denominations and sects that the Lord Jesus has returned as the incarnate Almighty God and let people come to listen to the voice of God, that is, the expression of Almighty God—The Word Appears in the Flesh. This is the fulfillment of the Lord Jesus' prophecy: "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me**" (Rev 3:20). Those who cannot recognize God's voice, even condemn and pass judgment on God's work in the last days, are the foolish virgins who are revealed and eliminated. These people will be wailing with clenched teeth in calamity.

On the matter of greeting the Lord, if we only focus on watching the sky for the Lord to descend on a cloud without listening at all to the voice of God and seeking the Holy Spirit's speech to the churches, but blindly listen to the pastors and elders' word, and designate all testimonies of the Lord's return in the flesh as falsehood, aren't we going against the Bible? What does it say in the Bible? The apostle

John stated clearly: “For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist” (2Jn 1:7). “And every spirit that confesses not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh is not of God: and this is that spirit of antichrist, whereof you have heard that it should come; and even now already is it in the world” (1Jn 4:3). Are the religious pastors and elders’ denial and condemnation of the incarnation of God consistent with the Bible? They claim that all testimonies about the Lord’s return as incarnate are false. Aren’t these deceptive words? If we go by the apostle John’s words, aren’t the religious pastors and elders who deny the incarnation antichrists? If you all listen to the deceptive nonsense spread by the pastors and elders, will you be able to greet the Lord? Can you see the appearance of God? Can you be brought before God like the wise virgins?

How can the appearance and work of God be found at all? Almighty God says, “**He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is God incarnate shall possess the expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him. Flesh that does not have the essence of God is decidedly not the incarnate God; of this there is no doubt. If man intends to inquire into whether it is God’s incarnate flesh, then he must corroborate this from the disposition He expresses and the words He speaks. Which is to say, to corroborate whether or not it is God’s incarnate flesh, and whether or not it is the true way, one**

must discriminate on the basis of His essence. And so, in determining whether it is the flesh of God incarnate, the key lies in His essence (His work, His utterances, His disposition, and many other aspects), rather than external appearance. If man scrutinizes only His external appearance, and as a result overlooks His essence, this shows that man is benighted and ignorant" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Since we are searching for the footprints of God, it behooves us to search for God's will, for the words of God, for His utterances—because wherever there are new words spoken by God, the voice of God is there, and wherever there are the footsteps of God, God's deeds are there. Wherever there is the expression of God, there God appears, and wherever God appears, there the truth, the way, and the life exist. In seeking God's footprints, you have ignored the words 'God is the truth, the way, and the life.' And so, many people, even when they receive the truth, do not believe that they have found God's footprints, and still less do they acknowledge the appearance of God. What a grave mistake! The appearance of God cannot be reconciled with man's notions, still less can God appear at the behest of man. God makes His own choices and His own plans when He does His work; moreover, He has His own objectives and His own methods. Whatever work He does, He has no need to discuss it with man or seek his advice, much less to notify each and every person of His work. This is the disposition of God, which should,**

moreover, be recognized by everyone. If you desire to witness the appearance of God, to follow God's footsteps, then you must first walk away from your own notions. You must not demand that God do this or that, much less should you place Him within your own confines and limit Him to your own notions. Instead, you should ask how you are to seek God's footprints, how you are to accept God's appearance, and how you are to submit to the new work of God: This is what man should do. Since man is not the truth, and is not possessed of the truth, he should seek, accept, and obey" ("The Appearance of God Has Ushered in a New Age" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Perilous Is The Road To The Heavenly Kingdom

II. Questions and Answers on Rapture

Question 1: You witness that the Lord Jesus has returned, and that He has appeared and worked in China, I believe that it is true because this is what the Lord Jesus had prophesied in the Bible: "**For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even to the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**" (Mat 24:27). But we think that the Lord will return in the last days to bring us into the kingdom of heaven, or at least He should lift us to the clouds to meet with Him in the air. Just as Paul said in the Bible, "Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord" (1Ts 4:17). But why hasn't the Lord come as described in the Bible? What does Almighty God's judgment work in the last days have to do with us being brought into the kingdom of heaven?

Answer: Many people believe that when the Lord returns, He will lift the believers in the air to meet with them. What you are saying is based on the word of Paul, not of the Lord. We have no way of telling whether Paul's word was from the idea of man or the Holy Spirit's enlightenment. This was what the Lord Jesus said in prophesying His return: "**But of that day and hour knows no man, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only**" (Mat 24:36). The Lord said it very clearly. When He returns, no one will know. Other than God, not even the angels will know. According to your idea, those who believe in the Lord would be lifted in the air to meet Him in the cloud. Is there any basis for this in God's words? If you go by Paul's word instead of the Lord's word, then you are utterly wrong! Paul was only a man; he did not represent the Lord Jesus. How could he know that the Lord would lift His believers to the

clouds when He returns? What was the basis of Paul's word? Do we have to wait for the Lord's return according to Paul's words? Why don't we welcome the Lord according to the Lord Jesus' word? This was what the Lord Jesus said in prophesying His return: "**If therefore you shall not watch, I will come on you as a thief, and you shall not know what hour I will come on you**" (Rev 3:3). What does it mean when someone only goes by Paul's word but not the Lord Jesus' word in believing in the Lord? Does it mean that Paul was the Lord and Christ? So whom do you believe in after all, Paul or the Lord Jesus? Isn't this worthy of our rumination? The Lord's second coming is to receive the saints into the kingdom of heaven. This is for certain. But no one can guess actually how the Lord will receive His followers into the kingdom of heaven. If we went by the concepts and imagination of man to understand it, assuming that the Lord would take people into the air to meet with them, that would be too unrealistic. We have all seen that Almighty God appears in China in the last days and expresses all kinds of truths for the cleansing and salvation of man; He is in the process of cleansing and making perfect all the wise virgins brought before His throne. God is determined to make this group of people overcomers before the catastrophe arrives. After making a group of overcomers, God unleashes the catastrophe to destroy this evil mankind that insanely resists God. After the catastrophe, God will appear to all peoples and all nations. Isn't this the real process of how the Lord will bring His followers into the kingdom of Christ upon His return? I feel that Almighty God's work in the last days has completely fulfilled the prophecies of the Lord Jesus. "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come**

again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also" (Jhn 14:2–3). Since the Lord is already here on earth, yet we still want to go up in the sky, aren't we going in the wrong direction? Since the Lord has come to earth, God has also predetermined for us to be born in the last days, to be brought before His throne, receive His work of judgment in the last days, be cleansed and made perfect by Him and finally enter the kingdom of Christ. What kind of a place has the Lord prepared for us? This refers to the kingdom of Christ being realized on earth, fulfilling the prophecy "**that where I am, there you may be also.**" This proves that when the Lord returns in the last days, He will come into His kingdom. God's work of judgment that begins with the house of God is to make a group of overcomers out of the wise virgins who are the first to receive God's work in the last days and then He'll openly appear by descending on a cloud. Thus the kingdom of Christ is realized on earth. The fact of God's work in the last days completely fulfills the prophecies of the Lord Jesus. Only through experiencing God's judgment work in the last days can we see the fulfillment of the prophecies in the Bible. Relying on man's notions and imagination to speculate on the prophecies is foolish and absurd! We should go by God's word, not man's, to meet the Lord's return. If we go by man's word, we will miss the chance of rapture at the Lord's coming, unable to meet Him. We will have only ourselves to blame.

Excerpted from the movie script of My Dream Of The Heavenly Kingdom

Question 2: It's that the Lord Jesus once said: "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also**" (Jhn 14:2–3). The Lord Jesus was resurrected and returned to heaven to prepare a place for us, so that means the place He prepared should be in heaven. If the Lord has returned, it should be to rapture us into heaven, to first lift us up into the sky to meet with the Lord. What you're bearing witness to now is that the Lord Jesus has returned, that He has become flesh and is on the earth speaking and working. So how is He going to lift us up to the kingdom of heaven? Is the kingdom of heaven on earth, or is it in heaven?

Answer: To understand whether the kingdom of heaven is actually in heaven or on the earth, first we must understand what the kingdom of heaven really is. Everyone knows that "heaven" usually refers to the celestial, to God. So naturally, the kingdom of heaven refers to God's kingdom, and it is the kingdom where God is in power, it is Christ's kingdom. So then is God's kingdom on earth, or is it in heaven? First let's look at what the Lord's prayer says. "**Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed be your name. Your kingdom come, Your will be done in earth, as it is in heaven**" (Mat 6:9–10). The Lord Jesus' words are very clear. The Lord requires that we pray for God's kingdom to come down to the earth, so that His will may be carried out on earth. The Lord Jesus did not say that God's kingdom would be established in heaven, and He particularly did not have us hope and pray for the day we would be raptured up to heaven. So isn't always hoping to be taken up to heaven to enter into God's kingdom out of line with the Lord's words,

and out of line with His will? Let's take a look at a prophecy in Revelation: "**And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in heaven, saying, The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ; and he shall reign for ever and ever**" (Rev 11:15). "**And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away**" (Rev 21:2–4). These two passages mention these two things: "**The kingdoms of this world are become the kingdoms of our Lord, and of his Christ.**" "**New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven.**" "**The tabernacle of God is with men.**" These refer to the kingdom of Christ being realized on earth. Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days is to establish the kingdom of Christ on earth. Before the great disaster comes upon the earth, God is going to make a group of overcomers, and this group will be the pillars of God's kingdom. They are the ones who will rule alongside God in the kingdom of Christ. In the disaster, those who have been perfected by God will be the people of God's kingdom. Those who have never accepted Almighty God's work in the last days will be exposed and eliminated by God, and they will have no part of the kingdom of Christ. The prophecies in the Book of Revelation start

with the utterances of God incarnate in the last days, and then go to the end of the great disaster when the kingdom of Christ is realized on earth, and then go on to the eternity of a new heaven and a new earth. When these prophecies are all fulfilled and completed, God's management plan will fully be fulfilled. So, all those who accept Almighty God's work in the last days, as long as they have been purified and perfected, will be the people of the kingdom of Christ. They are the ones who God will make into the group of overcomers before the disaster. They are those who are able to heed God's words, and obey and worship Him. When the great disaster comes, those people will be protected and kept by God. But those who live in vagueness and imagination, who just long to be raptured into the sky and meet with the Lord but do not accept Christ's judgment and purification in the last days will be dealt with in the disaster. Most people will be destroyed, and a minority of people will turn toward God through the crucible of the disaster. These are all true things that God is going to do soon.

The Lord Jesus promised us: "**I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also**" (Jhn 14:2–3). There is some kind of mystery within these words. If we look at them through our own notions and imaginations, then the Lord Jesus returned to heaven, so He was certainly preparing a place for us in heaven. Looking at it that way is a huge mistake! In God's work, we absolutely cannot rely on our own notions and imaginations because His work is unfathomable for human beings. We can only gain clarity on these things once He has completed them and they have been laid out in front of us. I didn't

understand either until after I had accepted Almighty God's work in the last days, and I had seen the facts of the work that He has completed. The Lord Jesus returning to prepare a place for us was actually for us to be born in the last days, accept the work of God incarnate in the last days, undergo His judgment, be purified and perfected, and finally to be brought into the kingdom of Christ. Think about it. God has become flesh and walks among mankind, He has expressed the truth to do the work of judgment in the last days, and we have heard the voice of God and are raised up to stand before Him. Is this not Him coming to meet us? We eat and drink God's words, we savor His words, we experience His work, and we attend the feast with God. Isn't that meeting the Lord? When the day comes that God's work is complete, when we have been purified and perfected, we will be brought into God's kingdom. Christ reigns in the kingdom of God, and we will worship God as His people in His kingdom. Doesn't this fulfill the Lord's prophecy, "**where I am, there you may be also**"?

Let's read a few passages from Almighty God's words, see how the kingdom of Christ will be realized on earth, what the beauty of the kingdom will be. Almighty God says, "**The kingdom is expanding in humanity's midst, it is forming in humanity's midst, and it is standing up in humanity's midst; there is no force that can destroy My kingdom. ... I am now walking abroad amongst My people and I live in their midst. Today, those who bear genuine love for Me—such people are blessed. Blessed are those who submit to Me, they will surely stay in My kingdom. Blessed are those who know Me, they will surely wield power in My kingdom. Blessed**

are those who seek after Me, they will surely escape from Satan's bonds and enjoy My blessings. Blessed are those who are able to forsake themselves, they will surely enter into My possession and inherit My kingdom's bounty. Those who run around for Me I will remember, those who make expenditures for Me I will joyfully embrace, and to those who make offerings to Me I will grant enjoyments. Those who find enjoyment in My words I will bless; they will surely be the pillars that hold up the ridgepole in My kingdom, they will surely have matchless abundance in My house, and no one can compare with them. Have you ever accepted the blessings that you were given? Have you ever sought the promises that were made for you? You will surely, under the guidance of My light, break through the stranglehold of the forces of darkness. You will surely not, in the midst of darkness, lose the light guiding you. You will surely be the master of all creation. You will surely be an overcomer before Satan. You will surely, at the downfall of the kingdom of the great red dragon, stand up amid the myriad throngs to bear witness to My victory. You will surely stand firm and unwavering in the land of Sinim. Through the sufferings you endure, you will inherit My blessings, and will surely radiate My glory throughout the entire universe" ("Chapter 19" of God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**As My words are consummated, the kingdom is gradually formed on earth and man is gradually returned to normality, and thus there is established on earth the**

kingdom in My heart. In the kingdom, all the people of God recover the life of normal man. Gone is the frosty winter, replaced by a world of cities of spring, where spring lasts all year. No longer are people faced with the gloomy, miserable world of man, and no longer do they endure the cold chill of the world of man. People do not fight with each other, countries do not go to war against each other, no longer is there carnage and the blood that flows from carnage; all lands are filled with happiness, and everywhere teems with warmth between men. I move throughout the world, I enjoy from atop My throne, and I live among the stars. The angels offer unto Me new songs and new dances. No longer does their own fragility cause tears to run down their faces. No longer do I hear, before Me, the sound of the angels weeping, and no longer does anyone complain of hardship to Me. Today, you all live before Me; tomorrow, you will all exist in My kingdom. Is this not the greatest blessing that I bestow upon man?" ("Chapter 20" of God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Once the work of conquest has been completed, man will be brought into a beautiful world. This life will, of course, still be on earth, but it will be totally unlike man's life today. It is the life that mankind will have after the whole of mankind has been conquered, it will be a new beginning for man on earth, and for mankind to have such a life will be proof that mankind has entered a new and beautiful realm. It will be the beginning of the life of man**

and God on earth. The premise of such a beautiful life must be that, after man has been purified and conquered, he submits before the Creator. And so, the work of conquest is the last stage of God's work before mankind enters the wonderful destination. Such a life is man's future life on earth, the most beautiful life on earth, the kind of life that man longs for, the kind that man has never before achieved in the history of the world. It is the final outcome of the 6,000 years of work of management; it is what mankind yearns for most, and it is also God's promise to man. But this promise cannot come to pass immediately: Man will enter the future destination only once the work of the last days has been completed and he has been completely conquered, that is, once Satan has been utterly defeated. After man has been refined, he will be without a sinful nature, because God will have defeated Satan, meaning that there will be no encroachment by hostile forces, and no hostile forces at all that can attack the flesh of man. And so man will be free and holy—he will have entered eternity" ("Restoring the Normal Life of Man and Taking Him to a Wonderful Destination" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**When humans have been restored to their original likeness, and when they can fulfill their respective duties, keep to their own proper places and submit to all of God's arrangements, God will have obtained a group of people upon the earth who worship Him, and He will also have established a kingdom upon the earth that worships Him. He will have eternal victory upon the earth, and all those**

who are opposed to Him will perish for all eternity. This will restore His original intention in creating humanity; it will restore His intention in creating all things, and it will also restore His authority upon earth, among all things, and among His enemies. These will be the symbols of His total victory. Thenceforth, humanity will enter into rest and begin a life that is on the right track. God will also enter into eternal rest with humanity, and commence an eternal life shared by both Himself and humans. The filth and disobedience upon the earth will have disappeared, and all the wailing will have dissipated, and everything in this world that opposes God will have ceased to exist. Only God and those people to whom He has brought salvation will remain; only His creation will remain" ("God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**I move above all men and am watching everywhere. Nothing ever looks old, and no person is as he used to be. I rest upon the throne, I recline above the whole universe, and I am fully satisfied, for all things have recovered their holiness, and I can peacefully reside within Zion once again, and the people on earth can lead serene, contented lives under My guidance. All peoples are managing everything in My hand, all peoples have regained their former intelligence and original appearance; they are no longer covered with dust, but, in My kingdom, are as holy as jade, each with a face like that of the holy one within man's heart, for My kingdom has been established among**

man" ("Chapter 16" of God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Throughout the world, only God and man exist. There is no dust or dirt, and all things are renewed, like a little lamb lying in a green grassland beneath the sky, enjoying all of God's grace. And it is because of the arrival of greenness that the breath of life shines forth, for God comes to the world to live alongside man for all eternity, just as it was said from God's mouth that 'I can peacefully reside within Zion once again.' This is the symbol of Satan's defeat, it is the day of God's rest, and this day shall be extolled and proclaimed by all people, and commemorated by all people. When God is at rest upon the throne, that is also the time when God concludes His work on earth, and it is the very moment that all of God's mysteries are shown to man; God and man will be forever in harmony, never apart —such are the beautiful scenes of the kingdom!**" ("Chapter 16" of Interpretations of the Mysteries of God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Yearning

III. Questions and Answers on How to Discern the Voice of God

Question: The Lord Jesus said, "**My sheep hear my voice**" (Jhn 10:27). The Lord returns to utter words to call to His sheep. The key thing in our waiting for the coming of the Lord is to seek to hear the voice of the Lord. But now, our greatest difficulty is that we don't know how we should listen for the Lord's voice. We also are not able to distinguish between what is God's voice, and what is man's voice. Please fellowship with us about how to be certain once and for all of the Lord's voice.

Answer: How do we hear the voice of God? The loftiness of our qualities or the length of our experience do not count in this. Believing in the Lord Jesus, what do we feel when we hear many of His words? Though we have no experience and knowledge of the Lord's words, the moment we hear them we feel they are the truth, that they have power and authority. How does this feeling arise? Is it generated by virtue of our experience? It is the effect of inspiration and intuition. This suffices to prove that people with heart and spirit can all feel that the words of God have power and authority; this is hearing the voice of God. Furthermore, the greatest difference between the voice of God and that of man is that the voice of God is the truth and has power and authority; we can feel it as soon as we hear it. Regardless of whether we can put it into words, the feeling is clear. It is easier to discern the voice of man; no sooner do we hear it than we feel it is understandable and attainable. We feel not the slightest power or authority in man's words, and even less can we confirm they are the truth. This is the greatest difference between the words of God and the words of man. For example, we see that the words of the Lord Jesus have power and authority; as soon as we hear them we can confirm they are the truth, they are profound,

mysterious, and beyond the measure of man. Now, let us look at the words of the apostles in the Bible. Though most of them are born of enlightenment by the Holy Spirit, they have no authority or power. They are simply correct words, no more than words that benefit people. Let us also discuss, could any man speak the words that the Lord Jesus did? There is no one who could. This affirms the words of the Lord Jesus as the voice of God. Making comparisons like this, aren't we able to distinguish between the voice of God, and the voice of man?

Let us read some of the words of Almighty God and see whether the words of Almighty God are really truth and the voice of God. Almighty God says, "**Throughout the universe I am doing My work, and in the East, thunderous crashes issue forth endlessly, shaking all nations and denominations. It is My voice that has led all men into the present. I shall cause all men to be conquered by My voice, to fall into this stream, and submit before Me, for I have long since reclaimed My glory from all the earth and issued it forth anew in the East. Who does not long to see My glory? Who does not anxiously await My return? Who does not thirst for My reappearance? Who does not pine for My loveliness? Who would not come to the light? Who would not look upon the richness of Canaan? Who does not long for the return of the Redeemer? Who does not adore the Great Almighty? My voice shall spread throughout the earth; I wish, facing My chosen people, to speak more words to them. Like the mighty thunders that shake the mountains and rivers, I speak My words to the whole universe and to mankind.**

Hence the words in My mouth have become man's treasure, and all men cherish My words. The lightning flashes from the East all the way to the West. My words are such that man is loath to give them up and at the same time finds them unfathomable, but rejoices in them all the more. All men are glad and joyful, celebrating My coming, as if an infant had just been born. By means of My voice, I shall bring all men before Me. Thenceforth, I shall formally enter into the race of men so that they will come to worship Me. With the glory that I radiate and the words in My mouth, I shall make it such that all men come before Me and see that the lightning flashes from the East and that I have also descended unto the 'Mount of Olives' of the East. They will see that I have already long been on earth, no longer as the Son of the Jews but as the Lightning of the East. For I have long since been resurrected, and have departed from mankind's midst, and then reappeared with glory among men. I am He who was worshiped countless ages before now, and I am also the infant forsaken by the Israelites countless ages before now. Moreover, I am the all-glorious Almighty God of the present age! Let all come before My throne and see My glorious countenance, hear My voice, and look upon My deeds. This is the entirety of My will; it is the end and the climax of My plan, as well as the purpose of My management. Let every nation worship Me, every tongue acknowledge Me, every man repose his faith in Me, and every people be subject unto Me!" ("The Seven Thunders Peal—Prophesying That the Gospel of the Kingdom

Shall Spread Throughout the Universe" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**As I turn My face to the universe to speak, all mankind hears My voice, and thereupon sees all the works I have wrought throughout the universe. Those who set themselves against My will, that is to say, who oppose Me with the deeds of man, will fall under My chastisement. I will take the multitudinous stars in the heavens and make them anew and, thanks to Me, the sun and the moon will be renewed—the skies will no longer be as they were and the myriad things on the earth will be renewed. All will become complete through My words. The many nations within the universe will be partitioned afresh and replaced by My kingdom, so that the nations upon the earth will disappear forever and all will become a kingdom that worships Me; all the nations of the earth will be destroyed and cease to exist. Of the human beings within the universe, all those belonging to the devil will be exterminated, and all who worship Satan will be laid low by My burning fire—that is, except for those now within the stream, all will be turned to ashes. When I chastise the many peoples, those in the religious world will, to varying extents, return to My kingdom, conquered by My works, because they will have seen the advent of the Holy One riding on a white cloud. All people will be separated according to their own kind, and will receive chastisements commensurate with their actions. All those who have stood against Me will perish; as for those whose deeds on earth have not involved Me, they**

will, because of how they have acquitted themselves, continue to exist on the earth under the governance of My sons and My people. I will reveal Myself to the myriad peoples and the myriad nations, and with My own voice, I will sound forth upon the earth, proclaiming the completion of My great work for all mankind to see with their own eyes.

"... When I created the world, I fashioned all things according to their kind, placing all things with forms together with their kind. As the end of My management plan draws near, I will restore the former state of creation; I will restore everything to the way it originally was, profoundly changing everything, so that everything will return to the bosom of My plan. The time has come! The last stage of My plan is about to be accomplished. Ah, unclean old world! You shall surely fall beneath My words! You shall surely be reduced to nothingness by My plan! Ah, the myriad things of creation! You will all gain new life within My words—you shall have your sovereign Lord! Ah, pure and unblemished new world! You shall surely revive within My glory! Ah, Mount Zion! Be silent no more—I have returned in triumph! From the midst of creation, I scrutinize the whole earth. On earth, mankind has begun a new life and has won new hope. Ah, My people! How can you not come back to life within My light? How can you not jump for joy under My guidance? The lands are shouting in jubilation, the waters are raucous with gleeful laughter! Ah, the resurrected Israel! How can you not feel pride on

account of My predestination? Who has wept? Who has wailed? The Israel of old has ceased to be, and today's Israel has risen up, erect and towering in the world, and has stood up in the hearts of all humanity. Today's Israel shall surely attain the source of existence through My people! Ah, hateful Egypt! Surely you do not still stand against Me? How can you take advantage of My mercy and try to escape My chastisement? How can you not exist within My chastisement? All those I love will surely live for eternity, and all those who stand against Me will surely be chastised by Me for eternity. For I am a jealous God and will not lightly spare men for all that they have done. I will watch over the whole earth and, appearing in the East of the world with righteousness, majesty, wrath, and chastisement, I shall reveal Myself to the myriad hosts of humanity!" ("Chapter 26" of God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Reading the words of Almighty God, we can all feel that this is God speaking to mankind. Apart from God, who could speak to all of mankind? Who could give expression to mankind of God's intention to save mankind? Who could declare plain as day to all mankind God's plan for His work of the last days and mankind's outcome and destination? Who could solemnly declare to the universe God's administrative decrees? Apart from God, no one could. Almighty God speaks to the whole of mankind and let's man feel the power and authority of God's words; the words of Almighty God are the direct expression of God, they are the voice of God! All the words uttered by Almighty God are as if God stands upon the third heaven and speaks

to all humanity; here Almighty God is speaking as the Creator to mankind, manifesting to mankind His unoffendable disposition of righteousness and majesty. When the sheep of God hear the words of Almighty God, though they do not understand the truth of them in the beginning, and though they have no experience of them, they feel that every word of Almighty God has power and authority and can affirm that they are the voice of God and the direct utterance of God's Spirit. God's chosen people only need hear the words of God to affirm they are His voice. Why can those pastors and elders in religious circles condemn Almighty God? As for those various antichrists who do not recognize the incarnation of God, and do not admit that God can utter the truth, although they see all the truths that God utters and feel that His words have power and authority, they still do not believe that God can speak in this way and do not admit that everything that God utters is the truth. What is the issue here? Can you tell? Almighty God incarnate in the last days speaks to all mankind, but how many of us can hear God's voice? There are at present many in religious circles who see Almighty God speaking, yet they cannot discern in hearing that it is the voice of God; they even treat the words that God speaks like the words of man, and go so far as to use man's conceptions to judge, slander and condemn Him. Do these people have a heart that fears God? Aren't they the same as the Pharisees of the past? They all hate the truth and condemn God. God's words have such great authority, such power, and they do not hear in the slightest that these words are the voice of God. Can such people be God's sheep? Their hearts are blinded; though they hear, they do not know, and though they see, they fail to understand. How can such people be even worthy of rapture? God incarnate in the last

days has uttered the truth, and exposed the people in religious circles: the true believers and the false, the lovers of truth and those who loathe it, the wise and the foolish virgins. All people are naturally divided, each into their kinds. As Almighty God says, "**All who are wicked will be chastised by the words spoken from the mouth of God, all who are righteous will be blessed by the words spoken from His mouth…**" ("The Millennial Kingdom Has Arrived" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Thus, those who can hear the voice of God have met the Lord's second coming, and have been raptured before the throne of God and are attending the marriage supper of the Lamb. These people are the wise virgins, and the most fortunate of mankind.

To hear the voice of God we must listen with heart and spirit. Like minds can easily be understood by each other. The words of God are the truth, they have power and authority; those with heart and spirit can definitely feel it. Many people, having read the words of Almighty God for just a few days, can affirm they are God's voice and His utterances. Every time God incarnates He comes to do a stage of work; unlike the prophets who, via God's directions, just transmit a few words in a particular context. When God incarnates to do a stage of work He must speak many words; He must utter many truths, reveal mysteries and speak prophecies. This needs years or even decades to complete. For example, in doing the work of redemption, the Lord Jesus first preached "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Mat 4:17). and taught man how to confess, how to repent, to forgive, to endure and how to suffer and bear one's cross, and all else that constitutes the way man in the Age of Grace should follow. He displayed God's disposition of love and mercy, and

revealed as well the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, and the conditions under which we enter it; it was only right up to His crucifixion, His resurrection and His ascension to heaven that God's work of redemption was completed. The words uttered by the Lord Jesus are all the truths that God has gifted to mankind in His work of redemption. In the last days Almighty God has come, and uttered all the truths that cleanse and save mankind. He has done the work of judgment starting from the house of God, and revealed to mankind His inherent disposition with righteousness as its core. He has unfolded all the great mysteries of His management plan spanning six thousand years; He has opened up the Age of Kingdom and brought to an end the Age of Grace. The words of Almighty God are the natural outpourings of the essence of God's life and the expression of His disposition; this is an entire stage of the work of word God is doing in the last days to thoroughly cleanse and save mankind. let us read some of the words of Almighty God, and hear whether they are the truth and God's voice.

Almighty God says, "**God's work in the present incarnation is to express His disposition primarily through chastisement and judgment. Building on this foundation, He brings more truth to man and points out to him more ways of practice, thereby achieving His objective of conquering man and saving him from his own corrupt disposition. This is what lies behind the work of God in the Age of Kingdom**" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various**

truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of

judgment done by God" ("Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The last days have already arrived. All things in creation will be separated according to their kind, and divided into different categories based on their nature. This is the moment when God reveals humanity's outcome and their destination. If people do not undergo chastisement and judgment, then there will be no way of exposing their disobedience and unrighteousness. Only through chastisement and judgment can the outcome of all creation be revealed. Man only shows his true colors when he is chastised and judged. Evil shall be put with evil, good with good, and all humanity shall be separated according to their kind. Through chastisement and judgment, the outcome of all creation will be revealed, so that the evil may be punished and the good rewarded, and all people become subject to the dominion of God. All this work must be achieved through righteous chastisement and judgment. Because man's corruption has reached its peak and his disobedience become exceedingly severe, only God's righteous disposition, one that is principally compounded of chastisement and judgment and is revealed during the last days, can fully transform and complete man. Only this disposition can expose evil and thus severely punish all the unrighteous. … During the last days, only righteous judgment can separate man according to their kind and bring man into a new realm. In this way, the entire age is brought to an end through God's righteous disposition of**

judgment and chastisement" ("The Vision of God's Work (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Do you understand now what is judgment and what is truth? If you do, then I exhort you to submit obediently to being judged, otherwise you shall never have the opportunity to be commended by God or to be brought by Him into His kingdom. Those who only accept judgment but can never be purified, that is, those who flee amidst the work of judgment, shall forever be detested and rejected by God. Their sins are more numerous, and more grievous, than those of the Pharisees, for they have betrayed God and are rebels against God. Such people who are not worthy even to do service shall receive more severe punishment, a punishment that is, moreover, everlasting. God shall not spare any traitor who once evinced loyalty with words but then betrayed Him. People such as these shall receive retribution through punishment of the spirit, soul, and body. Is this not precisely a revelation of the righteous disposition of God? Is this not God's purpose in judging man, and revealing him? God consigns all who perform all kinds of wicked deeds during the time of judgment to a place infested with evil spirits, and lets these evil spirits destroy their fleshly bodies as they wish, and those people's bodies emit the stench of corpses. Such is their fitting retribution. God writes down in their record books each and every one of the sins of those disloyal false believers, false apostles, and false workers; then, when the time is right, He casts them amidst the unclean spirits, letting**

these unclean spirits defile their entire bodies at will, so that they may never be reincarnated and never again see the light. Those hypocrites who do service for a time but are incapable of remaining loyal to the end are numbered by God among the wicked, so that they walk in the counsel of the wicked and become part of their disorderly rabble; in the end, God shall annihilate them. God casts aside and takes no notice of those who have never been loyal to Christ or have never contributed anything of their strength, and at the changing of the age He shall annihilate them all. They shall no longer exist on earth, much less gain passage into the kingdom of God. Those who have never been sincere to God, but are forced by circumstance into dealing with Him perfunctorily, are numbered among those who do service for His people. Only a small number of such people will survive, while the majority shall perish along with those who are not qualified even to do service. Ultimately, God shall bring into His kingdom all those who are of the same mind as God, the people and the sons of God, and those predestined by God to be priests. They will be the distillation of God's work. As for those who cannot be classed in any of the categories set by God, they shall be numbered among the unbelievers—and you can surely imagine what their outcome shall be. I have already said to you all that I should say; the road that you select is your choice alone. What you should understand is this: The work of God never waits for any that cannot keep pace with Him, and the righteous disposition of God shows no mercy

to any man" ("Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

In the last days Almighty God utters the truth and does His work of judgment. His words reveal the essence and the true state of the deep corruption of mankind; they completely expose every manifestation of man's resistance to God and man's imbuement with satanic disposition, and they display to mankind God's unoffendable disposition of holiness and righteousness. People have therefore seen the appearance and work of God, and have turned toward God one after another, and have accepted God's salvation. Almighty God expresses truth to judge people, and first implements judgment and chastisement through His words upon all people who believe in God, and exposes the true nature and real facts of all of those people of religious circles who profess belief in God yet resist God. Let us see how the words of Almighty God explain this. Almighty God says, "**Man looks up to Me in heaven and devotes particular concern to My existence in heaven, yet no one cares about Me in the flesh, for I who live among man am simply too insignificant. Those who only seek compatibility with the words of the Bible and who only seek compatibility with a vague God are a wretched sight to Me. That is because what they worship are dead words, and a God that is capable of giving them untold treasures; what they worship is a God that would lay Himself at the mercy of man—a God who does not exist. What, then, can such people gain from Me? Man is simply too lowly for words. Those who are against Me, who make limitless demands of Me, who have no love of the truth, who are rebellious toward Me—how could they**

be compatible with Me?" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Your hearts are filled with evil, betrayal, and deceit—and that being so, how much of your love is impure? You think that you have already given up enough for Me; you think that your love for Me is already enough. But then why are your words and actions always rebellious and deceitful? You follow Me, yet you do not acknowledge My word. Is this considered love? You follow Me, yet then cast Me aside. Is this considered love? You follow Me, yet you are mistrustful of Me. Is this considered love? You follow Me, yet you cannot accept My existence. Is this considered love? You follow Me, yet you do not treat Me as befits who I am, and you make things difficult for Me at every turn. Is this considered love? You follow Me, yet you try to fool Me and deceive Me in every matter. Is this considered love? You serve Me, yet you do not fear Me. Is this considered love? You oppose Me in all respects and all things. Is this all considered love? You have dedicated much, it is true, yet you have never practiced what I require of you. Can this be considered love? Careful reckoning shows that there is not the slightest hint of love for Me within you. After so many years of work and all the many words I have supplied, how much have you actually gained? Does this not merit a careful look back?**" ("Many Are Called, but Few Are Chosen" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The purpose of your faith in God is to use Him to achieve your own aims. Is this not further a fact of your**

offense against the disposition of God? You believe in the existence of the God in heaven and deny that of the God on earth, yet I do not recognize your views; I commend only those people who keep their feet on the ground and serve the God on earth, but never those who never acknowledge the Christ who is on earth. No matter how loyal such people are to the God in heaven, in the end they will not escape My hand that punishes the wicked. These people are the wicked; they are the evil ones who oppose God and have never gladly obeyed Christ. Of course, their number includes all those who do not know and, further, do not acknowledge Christ" ("How to Know the God on Earth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Man has been corrupted and lives in Satan's trap. All people live in the flesh, live in selfish desires, and there is not a single one among them who is compatible with Me. There are those who say that they are compatible with Me, but such people all worship vague idols. Although they acknowledge My name as holy, they tread a path that runs contrary to Me, and their words are full of arrogance and self-confidence. This is because, at root, they are all against Me and incompatible with Me**" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

We have recognized from the judgment of Almighty God's words and have seen our conceit, our self-importance and our deceit and that in all respects we betray our satanic disposition. Though we may expend ourselves, endure hardship, and pay the price for God, we do not have authentic submission toward God, and even less do we have

authentic love for Him. When trials and tribulations come, we may even complain about God, and suspect God, and deny God. This allows us to recognize that we deeply corrupted humans all have the nature of Satan. If our satanic nature, and our satanic disposition cannot attain purification, there will be no way to achieve authentic submission to God, and authentic love for God. In the past, we thought that we had believed in God for many years, had given things up and expended ourselves for God, had worked hard, so we had become good, and had become people who loved God and submitted to God. Only after experiencing the judgment and chastisement of Almighty God have we become aware, though in outward appearance we toil arduously for the Lord, yet we still often lie and deceive God, do lip service to God, remaining opinionated, drawing attention to ourselves, and showing off. Ultimately we've realized that our efforts and expenditures were in fact only to gain blessing, to obtain the reward of entry into the kingdom of heaven, all of which is bargaining with God. How can this be authentic submission to God? Even less is it an expression of love for God! Even so, we shamelessly said how we were the most God-loving, and the most submissive to God. This is truly senseless; it is not knowledge of God at all. In the revelation and judgment of God's words, we see that God sees into everything, and we fear and tremble in our hearts when we feel His immense holiness, righteousness and that His disposition is unoffendable. We feel that satanic as we are, we are ashamed to see God, unworthy to live before Him, then we fall down on the ground, wailing in repentance, even cursing ourselves, and slapping our own faces. Only then do we see that we live in our satanic disposition daily, and have not lived like a human being at all, and do not

deserve the name human. Only when we have experienced many judgments and chastisements, trials and refinements, as well as some prunings and dealings, do we gradually understand some truths, and authentically see through to the truth of our corruption. At that time we have some authentic knowledge of God, and at last begin to revere God and submit to God in our heart. Only this is entering the right track of belief in God. All of this is the outcome of going through judgment and chastisement by God. Were it not for the judgment and chastisement of the words of God, we would never have seen the true picture of our deep corruption by Satan, we would never have known the source of our sinning against and resisting God, and even less would we have known how to free ourselves from the bonds of sin and its rule over us to become truly obedient to God. Were it not for the strict judgment of the words of God, we could not know His righteous, majestic and unoffendable disposition; nor could we grow a heart that fears God, and nor could we become someone who fears God and departs from evil. This is a fact. If God did not incarnate, who could do the work of judgment in the last days? Who could show to man God's holy, righteous, and unoffendable disposition? If God did not incarnate, whose words would have such power and authority to be able to judge us, cleanse us, and save us in our deep corruption from sin? Almighty God's words and work completely show His status and identity as God, and show Him to be the Creator, and the appearance of the one true God! We have recognized the voice of God in the speech of Almighty God, and seen God's appearance. Why have there been so many people in recent years who abandon everything to spread and bear witness for the words of Almighty God? Why have there been so many people

who risk being caught, persecuted, and even killed by the CCP government as they spare no effort in spreading and bearing witness for Almighty God's work? Why have so many people preferred to endure the abandonment, humiliation, banishment, and condemnation by religious people so that they can go door to door spreading the gospel to them? It is because they have heard the voice of God, and have welcomed the appearance of God. They have answered God's demands, and relay the message, "**Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). Is this the Lord knocking on the door? And will we open the door for the Lord? So, when the Lord sends people to knock on our doors, should we pursue and investigate the true way, and seek to hear the voice of the Lord?

Excerpted from the movie script of Knocking At The Door

IV. Questions and Answers on the Conditions for Entering the Kingdom of Heaven

Question 1: We have believed in the Lord for so many years. Although we can preach and work for the Lord and suffer a lot, we can still always lie, deceive and defraud. Every day, we speak in defense of ourselves. So often, we are arrogant, opinionated, ostentatious, and condescending to others. We live under the situation of sinning and repenting, unable to escape the binding of the flesh, let alone experience and practice the Lord's word. We haven't lived out any reality of the Lord's word. In our case, can we be brought into the kingdom of heaven at all? Some people say, no matter how we sin, how we are bound by the flesh, the Lord sees us as sinless. They go by Paul's word: "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (1Co 15:52). And assume that the Lord will instantly change our form when He comes and bring us into the kingdom of heaven. Some people believe that those who receive salvation by faith but still constantly sin are unqualified to enter the kingdom of heaven. It is mainly based on God's word: "**Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). "**... you shall therefore be holy, for I am holy**" (Lev 11:45). These are two competing viewpoints that no one can say clearly, please communicate for us.

Answer: In the past, we used to treat the words of apostles like Paul as the word of God and go by Paul's word to believe in the Lord and work for the Lord. We went by Paul's word even with the matter of the Lord's return, but cast aside the Lord Jesus' word. Wasn't this a problem after all? When we believe in God, should we listen to the

word of God or man? As for the word of Paul in the Bible, was it the word of God or man? As far as how to distinguish whether it is the word of God or man, let us first set it aside. But we can be certain that the words of Jehovah and the Lord Jesus in the Bible are the words of God. No one can deny this. The words of apostles like Paul were definitely the words of man. Even with the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit, those were still the words of man, absolutely not the word of God. It is because neither the Lord Jesus nor the Holy Spirit had witnessed that the word of apostles, like Paul, was the word of God. Even the apostles themselves did not say what they had written was the word of God. Isn't this the fact? The words of man in the Bible are the words of man and cannot be regarded as the word of God, let alone be used as the basis as if they were God's word because some of man's words originated from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit while some were mixed with human will. They were not the expression of the truth. If we treat the word of man as the truth, it is easy to cause confusion and lead to nowhere for man. Why did thousands of denominations appear throughout the religious community? The root cause is because man has interpreted the word of man in the Bible as the word of God, giving rise to such serious confusion. About the matter of entering into the kingdom of heaven, we should only go by the Lord Jesus' word as final because the Lord Jesus is the incarnate Christ. Only the Lord Jesus is the Savior. The word of the Lord Jesus is the truth. Only the word of the Lord Jesus has authority. Paul was only a man. He was not Christ. He could not express the truth. So it was unavoidable that his word was blended with man's will and imagination. Even Paul dared not say his word was inspired by God, not to mention his letters being the word of

God. Wouldn't it be absurd if we regard the word of Paul as God's word? So whether we are obedient to God's will or qualified to be brought into the kingdom of heaven or not, we should go by the Lord Jesus' word alone for introspection and pursuit of the truth in order to find the right answer.

Let us read a few passages of Almighty God's word to know it more clearly. Almighty God says, "**Today, people believe the Bible is God, and that God is the Bible. So, too, do they believe that all the words of the Bible were the only words God spoke, and that they were all said by God. Those who believe in God even think that, although all of the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testament were written by people, they were all given by inspiration of God, and a record of the utterances of the Holy Spirit. This is the erroneous comprehension of man, and it does not completely accord with the facts. In fact, apart from the books of prophecy, most of the Old Testament is a historical record. Some of the epistles of the New Testament come from people's experiences, and some come from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit; the Pauline epistles, for example, arose from the work of a man, they were all the result of the Holy Spirit's enlightenment, and they were written for the churches, and were words of exhortation and encouragement for the brothers and sisters of the churches. They were not words spoken by the Holy Spirit—Paul could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit, and neither was he a prophet, much less did he see the visions that John beheld. His epistles were**

written for the churches of Ephesus, Philadelphia, Galatia, and other churches. And thus, the Pauline epistles of the New Testament are epistles that Paul wrote for the churches, and not inspirations from the Holy Spirit, nor are they the direct utterances of the Holy Spirit. … All he said that was edifying and positive to people was right, but it did not represent the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and it could not represent God. It is an egregious understanding, and a tremendous blasphemy, for people to treat the records of a man's experiences and a man's epistles as the words spoken by the Holy Spirit to the churches! … His identity was merely that of a working apostle, and he was merely an apostle who was sent by God; he was not a prophet, nor a foreteller. To him, his own work and the lives of the brothers and sisters were of the utmost importance. Thus, he could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit. His words were not the words of the Holy Spirit, much less could they be said to be the words of God, for Paul was nothing more than a creature of God, and was certainly not the incarnation of God. His identity was not the same as that of Jesus. The words of Jesus were the words of the Holy Spirit, they were the words of God, for His identity was that of Christ—the Son of God. How could Paul be His equal? If people see the epistles or words like Paul's as the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and worship them as God, then it can only be said that they are too indiscriminating. To speak more harshly, is this not simply blasphemy? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And

how could people bow down before the records of his epistles and of the words he spoke as if they were a holy book, or a heavenly book? Could the words of God be casually uttered by a man? How could a man talk on behalf of God?" ("Concerning the Bible (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The word of God cannot be made out to be the word of man, and still less can one make the word of man to be the word of God. A man used by God is not the incarnate God, and the incarnate God is not a man used by God. In this, there is an essential difference. ... The words of God incarnate open up a new age, guide all of mankind, reveal mysteries, and show man the direction he is to take in the new age. The enlightenment obtained by man is but simple instructions for practice or knowledge. It cannot guide all of mankind into a new age or reveal the mysteries of God Himself. When all is said and done, God is God, and man is man. God has the essence of God, and man has the essence of man. If man views the words spoken by God as simple enlightenment by the Holy Spirit, and takes the words of the apostles and prophets as words personally spoken by God, that would be man's mistake. No matter what, you should never mix up right and wrong, or make high out to be low, or mistake the profound for the shallow; no matter what, you should never deliberately refute what you know to be the truth**" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Surely, many believers of the Lord go by the word of Paul while waiting for the Lord to appear: "In a moment, in the twinkling of an

eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (1Co 15:52). This is a very absurd and preposterous thing. Because man's word does not represent God's word, and man's word is blended with human intentions. Even if some of its meanings marginally touch upon God's word, it is absolutely not God's word. Did the Lord Jesus say anything similar to this statement of Paul? Did the prophets make similar statements? Did the Holy Spirit witness that Paul's letters were God's word? Did the revelation of the Holy Spirit tell man to go by Paul's word to meet the Lord Jesus upon His second coming? Not at all! We can neither find such fact nor testimony. So, Paul's word can only be used as a reference, but not a basis. On the matter of waiting for the Lord to rapture us and bring us into the kingdom of heaven, if we go by Paul's word instead of the Lord's word as the basis, embracing our fantasy and waiting for the Lord to come and instantly change our images, it is very easy to make mistakes and we'll risk being abandoned by the Lord. In fact, as far as what kind of work the Lord Jesus will do when He returns in the last days, how the Lord will transform man into holiness, these were prophesied in the Bible. Let's read some verses.

"**For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God**" (1Pe 4:17).

"**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day**" (Jhn 12:47–48).

"**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12–13).

"**I pray not that you should take them out of the world, but that you should keep them from the evil. ... Sanctify them through your truth: your word is truth. ... And for their sakes I sanctify myself, that they also might be sanctified through the truth**" (Jhn 17:15, 17, 19).

From these verses we see, the Lord's return in the last days is to express the truth, to perform the judgment work beginning with the house of God, and guide man to understand and enter all truths. Only by experiencing the judgment of God's word can we understand the truth, receive cleansing, and qualify to enter God's kingdom. Therefore, what Paul said, "In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed" (1Co 15:52), this statement is inaccurate; it is very misleading to man. There are many of those who believe in the Lord, who just wait like this for the Lord to come and change their images and bring them into the kingdom of heaven. They don't practice the Lord's word at all and don't know how to follow God's will. They only go by their own enthusiasm to expend and work for the Lord, live under the conditions of sinning and repenting every day without truly repenting after all or breaking away from the binding and control of sinful nature. These people are going by Paul's word to wait for the Lord's appearance and descent. Is this practical? Can the Lord act like this? Do you say there are any

benefits in this “prophecy” of Paul for us in entering life? If we all go by this word of Paul to wait for the Lord's arrival, then will what the Lord said in His prophecy be fulfilled? “**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**” (Mat 25:6). “**My sheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me**” (Jhn 10:27). How will this prophecy be fulfilled? Who can still be able to actively seek and study the true way, look for the footsteps of God, and hear the voice of God?

In experiencing the work of Almighty God in the last days, we all see one fact, that God has indeed made a group of overcomers before the catastrophe. The catastrophe is now imminent. From the appearance and work of God in the last days to the arrival of the catastrophe, there is a period of about thirty years. Although this period is not very long, it is not as what Paul said that in a blink of an eye, man will be transformed into holiness. The vaguely spoken word of Paul feels supernatural to people, in which the Lord Jesus’ prophecy about hearing the voice of God and being raptured to supper was not mentioned. The prophecies of the Lord Jesus are particularly practical, accurate and completely consistent with the facts. Barely when the prophecies come true do we understand. When Almighty God appears and begins to work and speak, many hear the voice of God and turn to Almighty God. The process of their experience of God’s judgment and chastisement completely fulfills the prophecies in the Book of Revelation: “**Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb**” (Rev 19:9). But the “prophecy” of Paul has never been fulfilled. Moreover, Paul was not a prophet. His so-called “prophecy” was probably out of

human ideas and imagination. The Lord Jesus' prophecies are being fulfilled while Paul's words have never come true. The difference between them is so big! This is the difference between man's word and God's word. So, Paul's word cannot be the basis for us to enter the kingdom of heaven. I fear that if people in religion go by Paul's word, wait for the Lord to come and instantly change their images and bring them into the kingdom of heaven, they will become foolish virgins that will be abandoned by the Lord.

All of us can see it. When the prophecies of the Bible come true, most believers of the Lord can see it. But there is no way for us to see how Paul's words come true. It is enough to say that Paul's word was absolutely not inspired by God. It absolutely cannot be regarded as God's word. We can all see that every statement of the Lord Jesus is coming true, none of which fails to come true. Isn't this the fact? Almighty God has come in the last days and expressed many truths, which have been recorded in The Word Appears in the Flesh. The Word Appears in the Flesh has been published. It is after reading many words of Almighty God that many good sheep and head sheep of various denominations and sects discover Almighty God's word to be the truth and the voice of God, so they all follow Almighty God. These are the wise virgins who are brought before the throne of God ahead of the catastrophe. They are all attending the marriage supper of the Lamb. This fulfills the prophecies of the Lord Jesus: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth**" (Jhn 16:12). "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and**

knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me" (Rev 3:20). Have the prophecies of the Lord Jesus been fully fulfilled? Any word spoken by the Lord, any word of God conveyed by the prophets will be fulfilled without exception. It will not fail. Just as the Lord Jesus said, "**Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away**" (Mat 24:35). Then look at Paul's words, which of them has come true? As for whether the words spoken by Paul were inspired by God, whether they are the word of God, isn't it all clear now? If we only go by Paul's word, and obsessively wait for the Lord to arrive on the clouds and instantly change our images instead of seeking and listening to the Lord's voice, nor seeking the footsteps of God's work, don't you think we are the foolish virgins? Can people like these meet the Lord and be brought before God?

Excerpted from the movie script of The Moment Of Change

Question 2: Having believed in the Lord for so many years, we have always felt that as long as one can practice humility, tolerance and love brothers and sisters, and can follow the example of Paul by expending and laboring for the Lord, he is following the way of the Lord, and he will be raptured into the kingdom of heaven when the Lord returns. Just as Paul said, “I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness” (2Ti 4:7–8). But you have witnessed that when we believe in the Lord, we must receive the judgment work of Almighty God in the last days. When we receive cleansing, we will be commended by God and admitted in the kingdom of heaven. I have a question: We believe in the Lord for so many years, and we expend and labor for the Lord; can we enter the kingdom of heaven without receiving the judgment work of Almighty God in the last days?

Answer: Many believers of the Lord feel that following the example of Paul by expending and laboring for the Lord is the same as following the Lord's way and qualifying for admission to the kingdom of heaven when the Lord returns. This has become the conception of many people. Is this conception based on the Lord's word? Does it please the Lord's heart if we pursue it like this? Are we truly following the Lord's way by laboring for the Lord like Paul? Will we qualify for the kingdom of heaven? The Lord Jesus said, “**Not every one that said to Me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of My Father which is in heaven. Many will say to Me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in Your name? and in Your name have cast out devils? and in Your name done many**

wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity" (Mat 7:21–23). The Lord Jesus said it very clearly. Only those who follow the will of God could enter the kingdom of heaven. The Lord Jesus did not say those who sacrifice, expend, and labor for the Lord could enter the kingdom of heaven. Many of those who preach, cast out devils, and work wonders in the name of the Lord are people who labor. Not only are they not praised by the Lord, they are professed by the Lord as workers of iniquity. Paul said, "**I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness**" (2Ti 4:7–8). This saying contradicts the word of the Lord Jesus. It is fundamentally incompatible with the intention of the Lord. To be brought into the kingdom of heaven, there is only one affirmed way, which is what the Lord Jesus had clearly said: "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me**" (Rev 3:20). "To sup with the Lord" refers to receiving God's judgment work in the last days. By receiving the judgment and chastisement of God, we understand all the truths and are cleansed and made perfect, these are the results of supping with the Lord. So we can be certain that only by receiving cleansing from the judgment and chastisement of Almighty God in the last days can one enter the kingdom of heaven.

We all know that only the Lord Jesus Christ is the truth, the way and the life. So how one can enter the kingdom of heaven should be

based on the word of the Lord Jesus as final. Paul was only an apostle who spread the gospel. He could not speak on behalf of the Lord. The way he chose was not necessarily the way to the kingdom of heaven because the Lord Jesus did not witness Paul's way as correct. Moreover, the Lord Jesus did not tell people to follow the example of Paul. If we only go by Paul's word in choosing our way to the kingdom of heaven, it is easy to go astray. The Lord Jesus said : "**... but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven.**" This sentence tells us that we must believe in the Lord's word. The only way to the kingdom of heaven is by following the will of God. When the Lord Jesus returns in the last days to do the work of judgment starting with the house of God, if we hear God's voice, receive God's work in the last days, and manage to receive cleansing and be made perfect by God's judgment and chastisement, we will be the type of people who obey the will of God and qualify to enter the kingdom of heaven. This is absolutely certain. Those who only rely on enthusiasm to preach for the Lord, cast out devils and work wonders in the name of the Lord, neither pay attention to practicing the word of the Lord nor seek to receive the work of God at present. Can these people know the Lord? Do they follow the will of God? Why did the Lord Jesus say, "**I never knew you: depart from Me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7:23)? This passage is really thought-provoking! We all know that back then when the Pharisees of Judaism traveled all over the land and sea to preach the gospel, they endured much hardship and paid many prices. On appearance, they seemed to be loyal to God, but actually they only emphasized on engaging in religious rituals and following regulations instead of practicing God's word. They did not follow God's commandments.

They even abolished God's commandments. What they did completely contradicted God's will and deviated from God's way. So the Lord Jesus condemned and cursed them: "**Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for you compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, you make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves**" (Mat 23:15). It can be seen in what we assume: "As long as one works hard for the Lord, he will be brought into the kingdom of heaven when the Lord comes." This view is purely the conception and imagination of man that simply do not agree with the Lord's word. In seeking salvation and entry into the kingdom of heaven, we must do it according to the Lord Jesus' word as final. If we ignore the Lord's words, but take Paul's words as basis and Paul's practice as our goal of pursuit, how can we win the praise of the Lord?

In fact, before receiving the work of Almighty God in the last days, we all had this kind of conception and imagination that as long as we uphold the Lord's name, expend, preach and work for Him, we are practicing the Lord's word and following His way, and we will be brought into the kingdom of heaven when the Lord comes. Later, I received the work of Almighty God in the last days and saw His words. I will read them. "**Regarding work, man believes that work is to run around for God, preach everywhere, and expend for His sake. Though this belief is correct, it is too one-sided; what God asks of man is not solely to run around for Him; beyond just this, this work is concerned with ministry and provision within the spirit. ... Work refers not to running around for God, but to whether the life of man and what man lives out are able to give God**

enjoyment. Work refers to people using their devotion to God and their knowledge of God to testify about God, and also to minister to man. This is man's responsibility and this is what all man should understand. One could say that your entry is your work, and that you are seeking to enter during the course of working for God. Experiencing God's work does not merely mean that you know how to eat and drink of His word; more importantly, you must know how to testify about God and be able to serve God and be able to minister to and provide for man. This is work, and it is also your entry; this is what every person should accomplish. There are many who only focus on running around for God and preaching everywhere, yet overlook their individual experience and neglect their entry into the spiritual life. This is what has led those who serve God to become those who resist God" ("Work and Entry (2)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Upon seeing the word of Almighty God, I realized that God's requirement for man's work does not refer alone to suffering, running to and fro, and spending for God. It mainly refers to our ability to practice and experience God's word, our ability in articulating our understanding of God's word from practical experience, and our guidance for brothers and sisters to enter the reality of God's word. Only this kind of work will satisfy God's will. Recalling my belief in the Lord for many years, although I have done preaching work everywhere in the name of the Lord in storm and rain, endured some hardship and paid some prices, I haven't paid attention to practicing and experiencing the Lord's word, so I could not talk about the experiences and testimonies of how I practiced the

Lord's word. In my preaching work, I could only speak about some empty words and doctrines from the Bible, and teach brothers and sisters to follow some religious rituals and rules. How could this have led brothers and sisters into the reality of God's word? Not only that, when I did preaching work, I often showed off myself to let people look up to me, and often went against the Lord's requirements by acting according to my own ideas. By sacrificing something, enduring some hardship, and paying some prices for the Lord, I thought that I was the one who loved the Lord most, and I was most faithful to the Lord. I was shameless enough to demand the blessing of the kingdom of heaven from God while positioning myself high above and looking down on those brothers and sisters who were passive and weak. Since I only focused on relying on enthusiasm to work for the Lord but did not pay attention to practicing and experiencing the Lord's word, after believing in the Lord for many years, I ended up not having the slightest knowledge of the Lord and fear of God in my heart, not to mention the transformation of my life disposition. Because I had believed in the Lord for many years, and I had been expending and enduring much hardship, I was becoming increasingly arrogant and insubordinate to anyone. I was even engaged in frauds and deception, revealing Satan's disposition in every aspect. The way I labored actually had nothing to do with the reality of practicing the Lord's word and obeying the Lord. How could this have led to understanding the Lord? For a person like me who had no reality of truth and understanding of the Lord, wasn't everything I did humiliating and resisting the Lord? How could this be exalting and witnessing for the Lord? After experiencing the work of Almighty God, I realized that no matter how many years a person

has believed in the Lord, no matter how hard he has labored, if he has not experienced the judgment and chastisement of God in the last days, it is impossible for him to become a person who follows God's will and become someone who truly obeys and worships God. This is absolutely true.

Let’s take a look at those religious pastors and elders. Although they have cast aside everything to labor for the Lord, what kind of work have they been doing? What is the nature of their work? Having believed in the Lord for many years, they have never pursued the truth. They failed to receive the work of the Holy Spirit, and explain to us how to resolve the practical problems of our faith and entry in life. They often talk about some empty doctrines in the Bible to deceive the believers, and take every opportunity to witness how far they have trekked in preaching for the Lord, how much work they have done, how much pain they have endured, how many churches they have built, etc., to establish themselves for others to worship and follow. As a result, after working for so many years, not only have they failed in leading brothers and sisters to understand the truth and know God, but they let brothers and sisters worship and follow them, embark on the path of worshiping man and betraying God unknowingly. So let's think, are these pastors and elders following the Lord's way by working and expending like that? Aren't they doing evil against the Lord? Particularly the way they treat the work of Almighty God in the last days, most pastors and elders actually realize the word expressed by Almighty God is the truth, that the work of Almighty God is the work of the Holy Spirit, but they do not seek and study it. In order to protect their status and livelihood, they frantically contrive rumors and spread all kinds of absurdity and

fallacies instead to condemn and resist Almighty God, and lock down the religious community to an air-tight and water-proof condition. They do not allow anyone to seek and study the true way, and bar people from entering the church to witness God's work. They even collude with the evil Chinese Communist Party to capture and persecute those who witness for Almighty God. Aren't they blatantly acting against God? Their sins against God are even worse than the sins of the Pharisees against the Lord Jesus in the past. Much worse! According to these facts, can we still say that we are following God's will when we are expending and laboring in the name of the Lord? Can we still say that as long as we are holding on to the Lord's name, keeping the Lord's way, and we are trekking and expending for the Lord, we will qualify to be brought into the kingdom of heaven? We will understand more after reading several more passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says, "**You say you have always suffered whilst following God, that you have followed Him through thick and thin, and have shared with Him the good times and the bad, but you have not lived out the words spoken by God; you wish only to run about for God and expend yourself for God each day, and have never thought to live out a life of meaning. You also say, 'In any case, I believe God is righteous. I have suffered for Him, run around for Him, and devoted myself for Him, and I have worked hard despite not receiving any recognition; He is sure to remember me.' It is true that God is righteous, yet this righteousness is untainted by any impurities: It contains no human will, and it is not tainted by the flesh, or by**

human transactions. All who are rebellious and in opposition, all who are not in compliance with His way, will be punished; none is forgiven, and none is spared!" ("The Experiences of Peter: His Knowledge of Chastisement and Judgment" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**You must know what kind of people I desire; those who are impure are not permitted to enter into the kingdom, those who are impure are not permitted to besmirch the holy ground. Though you may have done much work, and worked for many years, in the end if you are still deplorably filthy, then it will be intolerable to the law of Heaven that you wish to enter My kingdom! From the foundation of the world until today, never have I offered easy access to My kingdom to those who curry favor with Me. This is a heavenly rule, and no one can break it! You must seek life. Today, those who will be made perfect are the same kind as Peter: They are those who seek changes in their own disposition, and who are willing to bear testimony to God and perform their duty as a creature of God. Only people such as this will be made perfect. If you only look to rewards, and do not seek to change your own life disposition, then all your efforts will be in vain—this is an unalterable truth!**" ("Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). It is clearly said in the word of Almighty God. God is holy and righteous. God absolutely forbids any filthy and corrupt people to enter His kingdom.

Question 3: We've believed in the Lord for so many years, and we've maintained His name. We often read the Bible, pray and confess our sins to the Lord; we are humble, patient, loving toward others. We often do charity, donate, and sacrifice everything else to work for the Lord and spread the gospel to witness Him. Are we not practicing the Lord's words and following His way? How can you say we never had any reality of faith in the Lord or are an unbeliever? In the Bible, Paul said, "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness" (2Ti 4:7–8). Therefore, I think that our faith in the Lord will obtain His praise. When the Lord arrives, He will definitely rapture us into the kingdom of heaven.

Answer: Many believers think that as long as they keep the Lord's name, read the Bible, pray and gather often, are able to sacrifice everything for the Lord and labor for the Lord, then they are true believers. They think that as long as they believe in the Lord this way, they'll be lifted into the kingdom of heaven when He comes again. Is believing in God as easy as people think? If people believe in God like this, can they really obtain God's approval? The Pharisees that were denounced and condemned by the Lord Jesus, isn't that the way they believed in God too? They often prayed and worked hard and even traveled to the ends of the earth to spread the gospel. Then why has their faith failed to gain the Lord's approval and incurred His condemnation and curses instead? People that have read the Bible before understand that although the Pharisees read the Bible well, prayed often, spread God's work, suffered greatly, loved others, and appeared to be devout, true believers on the outside, in reality, God had no place in their hearts; they did not

magnify God. In their faith, they did not focus on seeking the truth in God's words or understanding His will, much less practicing His words and following His commandments. They only focused on disseminating knowledge about the Bible and theological theory; they only focused on performing religious ceremonies, following the rules to glorify themselves, establishing themselves to be worshiped by others. They believed in God like that for many years and had no knowledge of God. They definitely did not become obedient and reverent toward God. Therefore, when the Lord Jesus did His work, they did not search for the truth. They only measured the Lord Jesus based on their own conceptions and imaginings. Regardless of how profound the Lord Jesus' preaching was or how much authority and power His work had, they did not search for or study them. They still fanatically resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus, then crucified Him on the cross. They were cursed and punished. Can the faith of the Pharisees be called true faith in God? Did God accept the faith of the Pharisees? Not only did the Lord Jesus not approve them, but He condemned and cursed them, saying, "**But woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites!**" (Mat 23:13–36). The Pharisees only trusted their own conceptions and imaginings; they only believed in the vague God in heaven. They did not believe in the Lord Jesus incarnate who expressed the truth. They were all bored with the truth and hated the truth. They believed in God, but resisted God as well.

Let's look at today's religious communities. Many pastors and elders keep the Lord's name; they pray in the Lord's name, read the Bible, forsake everything else for Him and labor for Him, but when Almighty God expresses the truth to perform His work of judgment

in the last days, they define God’s work based on their own conceptions and imaginings. They think God’s words and work are in the Bible and that anything that exceeds the Bible is heresy. They know clearly Almighty God’s words are the truth; they know those words can conquer men, but they do not search for them or study them. They still continue to spread all kinds of rumors and lies, fanatically slandering, condemning and blaspheming against Almighty God. They stop at nothing to restrict believers from seeking the true way. They even go as far as report those who bear witness to God's work in the last days to the police so they'll be arrested. Tell me, how are these pastors and elders any different from the Pharisees that resisted the Lord Jesus? Aren't they both people that know the true way but resist it anyway? Aren't they both enemies of God that hate the truth? Therefore, we can see that if people believe in the Lord but only keep His name, labor for Him and appear devout, that does not mean they practice the Lord's words or follow the Lord's way. It also does not mean they are true believers that serve the Lord. The fact that they appear devout does not mean they can magnify the Lord in their heart, revere Him or obey Him; it definitely does not mean they understand the truth or know Him. If people believe in the Lord but do not seek the truth, really practice the truth or experience the Lord's words, well, no matter how many years those people believe in the Lord or how they labor for Him, they cannot obtain His praise. This is especially true for pastors and elders in the religious communities. Although they labor for the Lord's work, they still fanatically resist and condemn Almighty God, Christ of the last days. This is enough to prove that they are evil-doers that resist God. They are exposed as antichrists by God's work

in the last days. They will definitely incur God's curses and punishment. It's just like the Lord Jesus said, "**Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name? and in your name have cast out devils? and in your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7:22–23). Almighty God's words in the last days are also extremely clear. Almighty God says, "**I do not care how meritorious your hard work is, how impressive your qualifications, how closely you follow Me, how renowned you are, or how much you have improved your attitude; as long as you have not met My demands, you will never be able to win My praise. Write off all those ideas and calculations of yours as soon as possible, and start treating My requirements seriously; otherwise, I will turn everyone to ash in order to bring an end to My work and, at worst turn My years of work and suffering into nothing, for I cannot bring My enemies and those people who reek of evil and have Satan's appearance into My kingdom or take them into the next age**" ("Transgressions Will Lead Man to Hell" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). God's words are immutable truths. Whether believers can obtain His praise does not depend on how much they work or suffer; it mainly depends on whether they practice God's words or obey Him. However, Paul said, "I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith: From now on there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness" (2Ti 4:7–8). These words are Paul's own conceptions and imaginings.

They are not at all in accordance with God's words or the truth. They are the exact opposite of God's words!

What does it mean to have true faith in God, and how can our faith gain His approval? This question is an essential one. This is directly related to whether our belief in God can earn us salvation and allow us to enter His kingdom! Before, in our faith, we only focused on working for the Lord so that we could enter His kingdom when He returned. Now everyone realizes that this is the wrong path of faith. No one in the religious community knows what true faith in God is or how we should believe in God to receive His approval. No one understands the answers to these questions. Almighty God, Christ of the last days, has revealed all the truths and mysteries concerning faith in God. Almighty God speaks very clearly about the question: What is true faith in God? Almighty God says, "**Though many people believe in God, few understand what faith in God means, and what they must do to conform to God's will. This is because, though people are familiar with the word 'God' and phrases such as 'the work of God,' they do not know God, and still less do they know His work. No wonder, then, that all those who do not know God are muddled in their belief of Him. People do not take belief in God seriously, and this is entirely because believing in God is too unfamiliar, too strange for them. In this way, they fall short of God's demands. In other words, if people do not know God, and do not know His work, then they are not fit for God's use, and still less are they able to satisfy His will. 'Belief in God' means believing that there is a God; this is the simplest concept as regards believing in God. What's**

more, believing that there is a God is not the same as truly believing in God; rather, it is a kind of simple faith with strong religious overtones. True faith in God means the following: On the basis of the belief that God holds sovereignty over all things, one experiences His words and His work, purges one's corrupt disposition, satisfies the will of God, and comes to know God. Only a journey of this kind may be called 'faith in God.' Yet people often see belief in God as a simple and frivolous matter. People who believe in God in this way have lost what it means to believe in God, and though they may continue to believe until the very end, they shall never gain God's approval, because they tread upon the wrong path. There are still those today who believe in God according to letters and in hollow doctrine. They do not know that they lack the essence of belief in God, and they cannot receive God's approval. Still they pray to God for blessings of safety and sufficient grace. Let us stop, quiet our hearts, and ask ourselves: Can it be that believing in God really is the easiest thing on earth? Can it be that believing in God means nothing more than receiving much grace from God? Are people who believe in God without knowing Him or who believe in God and yet oppose Him really able to satisfy the will of God?" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**You may think that believing in God is about suffering, or doing all manner of things for Him; you might think that the purpose of believing in God is so that your flesh may be at peace, or so that everything in your life runs smoothly,**

or so that you may be comfortable and at ease in all things. However, none of these are purposes that people should attach to their belief in God. If you believe for these purposes, then your perspective is incorrect, and it is simply impossible for you to be perfected. God's actions, God's righteous disposition, His wisdom, His words, and His wondrousness and unfathomableness are all things people ought to understand. Having this understanding, you should use it to rid your heart of all personal demands, hopes, and notions. Only by eliminating these things can you meet the conditions demanded by God, and it is only by doing this that you can have life and satisfy God. The purpose of believing in God is to satisfy Him and to live out the disposition He requires, so that His actions and glory may be manifested through this group of unworthy people. This is the correct perspective for believing in God, and this is also the goal that you should seek. You should have the right viewpoint about believing in God and you should seek to obtain God's words. You need to eat and drink God's words and you must be able to live out the truth, and in particular you must be able to see His practical deeds, His wonderful deeds throughout the entire universe, as well as the practical work He does in the flesh. People can, through their practical experiences, appreciate just how God does His work on them and what His will is toward them. The purpose of all of this is to eliminate people's corrupt satanic disposition. Having cast out all the uncleanliness and unrighteousness inside you, and having

cast off your wrong intentions, and having developed true faith in God—only with true faith can you truly love God. You can only genuinely love God on the foundation of your belief in Him. Can you achieve love for God without believing in Him? Since you believe in God, you cannot be muddle-headed about it. Some people become full of vigor as soon as they see that faith in God will bring them blessings, but then lose all energy as soon as they see that they have to suffer refinements. Is that believing in God? Ultimately, you must achieve complete and utter obedience before God in your faith. You believe in God but still have demands of Him, have many religious notions you cannot put down, personal interests you cannot let go of, and still you seek blessings of the flesh and want God to rescue your flesh, to save your soul—these are all behaviors of people who have the wrong perspective. Even though people with religious beliefs have faith in God, they do not seek to change their dispositions and do not pursue knowledge of God, but rather seek only the interests of their flesh. Many among you have faiths that belong in the category of religious convictions; this is not true faith in God. To believe in God, people must possess a heart that is prepared to suffer for Him and the will to give themselves up. Unless people meet these two conditions, their faith in God is not valid, and they will not be able to achieve change in their disposition. Only people who genuinely pursue the truth, seek knowledge of God, and pursue life are those

who truly believe in God" ("Those Who Are to Be Made Perfect Must Undergo Refinement" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God has revealed all of the mysteries and truths regarding faith in God. Many people believe in God but still don't know what true faith in God is, nor do they know God or His work. This kind of faith is a muddled faith that will never earn God's praise! Almighty God clearly specifies what true faith is. "**True faith in God means the following: On the basis of the belief that God holds sovereignty over all things, one experiences His words and His work, purges one's corrupt disposition, satisfies the will of God, and comes to know God. Only a journey of this kind may be called 'faith in God.'**" Almighty God speaks so clearly about real faith! People who believe in God actually believe in God's words. That is, practicing His words and experiencing His work. This is the way they'll truly understand the truth and really know God. This is real faith in God. In the religious community, we only talk about how to work and suffer for the Lord; we don't talk about how to practice or experience the Lord's words. Therefore, no matter how many years we believe in God, we will not understand the truth, nor will we know God. If we believe in God like this, how can God acknowledge us! The Lord Jesus said, "**Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name? and in your name have cast out devils? and in your name done many wonderful works?**" (Mat 7:22). What did the Lord Jesus say next? "**And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7:23). This shows that we believers in the Lord sacrifice and work for Him according to our own will, we do not

practice or experience the Lord's words; not only does this kind of faith not obtain God's approval, it's also condemned by God. Thinking back to my time as a believer within the religious community, I didn't focus on practicing the Lord's words or experiencing His work; I only repented to Him after I sinned, begging Him for forgiveness. When in trouble, I prayed to the Lord, asking Him for help. I thought as long as I memorized a few Bible passages, kept the words of the Bible and followed the rules, I was believing in the Lord. I thought if I just zealously sacrificed and worked for the Lord, I was believing in the Lord well. I thought I loved the Lord and was loyal to Him. I thought when the Lord returned, I'd definitely enter His kingdom. This continued until I accepted Almighty God's work in the last days and saw what He says, "**Many who follow God are only concerned with how to gain blessings or stave off disaster. ... Such people only have one simple aim in following God, and that aim is to receive blessings. Such people cannot be bothered to pay heed to anything else that does not directly involve this aim. To them, there is no goal more legitimate than believing in God to receive blessings—it is the very value of their faith. If something does not contribute to this aim, they remain completely unmoved by it. This is the case with most people who believe in God today. Their aim and intention seem legitimate, because as they believe in God, they also expend for God, dedicate themselves to God, and perform their duty. They give up their youth, forsake family and career, and even spend years away from home busying themselves. ... In this, we discover a previously unidentified problem:**

Man’s relationship with God is merely one of naked self-interest. It is a relationship between a receiver and a giver of blessings. To put it plainly, it is akin to the relationship between employee and employer. The employee works only to receive the rewards bestowed by the employer. There is no affection in such a relationship, only transaction. There is no loving or being loved, only charity and mercy. There is no understanding, only suppressed indignation and deception. There is no intimacy, only an uncrossable chasm. Now that things have gotten to this point, who can reverse such a course? And how many people are capable of truly understanding how dire this relationship has become? I believe that when people immerse themselves in the joy of being blessed, none can imagine how embarrassing and unsightly such a relationship with God is” (“Man Can Only Be Saved Amidst God’s Management” in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Almighty God cuts to the point and reveals men's true nature: They believe in Him because they want blessings. They want to make a deal with Him. I have just realized that my motives for my faith were too impure. I was pursuing blessings, grace, rewards and the rapture into the kingdom of heaven. As long as I could enjoy the blessings of the kingdom of heaven, I would bear any suffering and pay any price, but I did not focus on practicing and experiencing the Lord's words; I did not try to get to know God. As a result, my life had nothing to do with the truth contained in God's words. I have believed in the Lord for many years but had not the slightest knowledge of the Lord. I thought my faith could obtain the Lord's praise, and that when He returned, I'd

be lifted into the kingdom of heaven. I really was too shameless and ignorant! God was incarnated twice to carry out the work of redeeming and saving humanity. He did this to give the truth to mankind. This will allow them to accept God's words as their life, freeing them from the bondage and control of sin and making them obedient to God. I did not understand God's will; I did not pursue the truth, and I definitely did not pursue knowledge of God. I just singularly pursued grace and rewards. Even if I sacrificed something, that would only be in exchange for the blessings of the kingdom of heaven. How was I believing in God? How was I loving and being faithful to God? Clearly, I was just trying to make a deal with God; I was trying to use Him and trick Him. In the judgment of Almighty God's words, I've finally seen how deeply I've been corrupted by Satan! I was too selfish and crafty! I lacked any semblance of humanity! I was a despicable villain, only looking out for myself. I was not fit to live before God! God is the Creator of all things. I am His creation. It is right and proper for me to believe in God and sacrifice everything for Him. That is my duty. That is my responsibility as a created being. I lacked any reason or conscience. When I did sacrifice anything or suffer at all, it was part of my attempt to make a deal with God; I wanted Him to compensate me; I wanted blessings. This faith of mine, by which I trick God, how can I not incur His hatred and loathing? How can God possibly allow a satanic creature like me to enter His kingdom? This time, I was kneeling before God, praying in repentance. No matter how God deals with me or what my final outcome is, I'll willingly obey God's plan. Even if I just render service to God, I will pursue the truth. I will do my duty as His creation. By experiencing Almighty God's

judgments, chastisements, refinements and trials of the word one-after-another, my viewpoint with regard to my faith in Him has changed. I have started to pursue and practice the truth. Gradually, I have started down the right path of faith which can earn salvation. These are all the results of experiencing Almighty God's judgment in the last days! Thank Almighty God for saving me!

After experiencing the judgment and chastisement of Almighty God in the last days, I've finally seen that I have been corrupted far too deeply by Satan; I was too arrogant and completely without reason! On the outside, I looked like I could spread the gospel, do some work, endure suffering and talk about the words of the Bible, memorize a few passages. I thought I knew God and acted arrogantly and all holier-than-thou. Actually, I did not pray to God or search for the truth and principles. I just blindly did whatever according to my own conceptions. This was especially true when it came to my treatment of the Lord's return. I restricted God to the Bible based on my own conceptions and imaginings. I thought that all of God's words and work were in the Bible, and none of His words or work existed outside the Bible. I stubbornly believed that people that believe in the Lord must keep the Bible, and thought, how could anyone that doesn't keep the Bible believe in the Lord? The result was that when Almighty God's work in the last days touched me, I didn't seek or investigate it. I even followed the pastors and elders in denying and judging it. I was arrogant and lost all reason, right before God! My behavior, was that faith in God? No, it was simply evil! How am I any different from the Pharisees that resisted the Lord Jesus?

I saw something that Almighty God has said, "**Since you believe in God, you must put faith in all of the words of God and in all of His work. Which is to say, since you believe in God, you must obey Him. If you are unable to do this, then it does not matter whether you believe in God or not. If you have believed in God for many years, and yet have never obeyed Him, and do not accept the entirety of His words, and instead ask that God submit to you and act according to your notions, then you are the most rebellious of all, you are a nonbeliever. How could such people be able to obey the work and words of God that do not conform to the notions of man? Most rebellious of all are those who intentionally defy and resist God. They are the enemies of God, the antichrists**" ("Those Who Obey God With a True Heart Shall Surely Be Gained by God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**Those who are not cautious when they encounter the new work of the Holy Spirit, who run their mouths off, are quick to judge, who give free rein to their natural instinct to deny the rightness of the Holy Spirit's work, and who also insult and blaspheme it—are such disrespectful people not ignorant of the Holy Spirit's work? Are they not, furthermore, people of great arrogance, people who are inherently proud and ungovernable? ... Such disrespectful, indulgent people are pretending to believe in God, and the more people are like this, the more liable they are to offend God's administrative decrees. Do not all those arrogant ones who are innately unbridled, and who have never obeyed anyone, all walk upon this path? Do they not**

oppose God day after day, God who is always new and never old?" ("Knowing the Three Stages of God's Work Is the Path to Knowing God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Every sentence of Almighty God's words was embedded in my heart. His judgment has exposed my nature and essence: I believe in God but resist Him. I felt God's wrath upon me. I felt His righteous and majestic disposition which cannot be offended. I trembled with fear, and couldn't help but kneel to the ground in shame of my own evil deeds. I have believed in the Lord for all these years, so how am I still so arrogant and conceited? Why do I lack any semblance of reverence to God? When God's work was not in line with my conceptions, I judged and denied it at will. I did not search for the truth or obey God at all. Am I not an arrogant person that believes in God, yet still resists Him? My behavior offended God's disposition long ago. If it wasn't for God's mercy and salvation, I would have been sent to hell long ago. How could I have the chance to hear God's voice and accept His judgment and cleansing in the last days? I felt that I really had been saved by God! This time, I hated and cursed myself more than ever before. I resolved that, no matter how God judges, chastises, prunes, deals with, tests or refines me, I will willingly accept it and obey Him. By continually reading Almighty God's words and experiencing His judgment and chastisement, I now understand many truths that I previously did not. Thanks be to God. I am gaining an ever-greater understanding of my own satanic nature of resisting and betraying God. I now also have some true knowledge about God's holy essence and righteous disposition which allows no offense. Unconsciously, I've developed a reverence of God and a thirst for the truth. I keep a much lower profile than I did before. I'm not as arrogant and

conceited. When I'm confronted with things, I can consciously deny myself, search for the truth and practice the truth. My life disposition gradually changed. These are all the results of experiencing the judgment and chastisement by God's word. Now I finally understand what true faith in God is. I understand the true value and meaning of faith in God. This is something that believers never achieved during the Age of Grace. During the Age of Grace, the majority of us believers focused on imitating Paul. We worked and suffered for the Lord. We even preferred to suffer in jail rather than deny the Lord's name. Can this kind of faith in God change our life disposition? Can it allow us to really obey God and love Him? In the end, can this faith really allow us to defeat Satan? Can it really satisfy God? God expresses the truth and does His work on men, asking them to practice and experience His words. Why does He do this? He does it to change men's life disposition and save them from the influence of Satan. In the end, it allows men to know Him and obey Him. This is what true faith in God can achieve. But most believers of the Lord think that as long as they sacrifice everything and labor hard for the Lord, they will be after the Lord's heart, and that when He returns they will be raptured into the kingdom of heaven. Consider this, everyone: God does His work on us. Is this so that after we spread His work, suffering in the process, we ask Him, “I've fought the good fight. and finished running down the path. There is laid up for me a crown of righteousness”? Is this what God demands of men? Is this God's will? If this is how we understand faith in God, are we not misunderstanding Him?

Now that we have said all of this, do you understand what true faith in God is? Is it OK to believe in God but not experience His

judgment or cleansing in the last days? Can we know God if we believe in Him but do not experience the judgment and chastisement of His word? Can we understand God's will and really obey and worship Him if we believe in Him but do not practice His words or experience His work? Therefore, if we really want to know God and change our dispositions, accepting and experiencing Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days is extremely important! Almighty God says, "**If people remain stuck in the Age of Grace, then they shall never be rid of their corrupt disposition, let alone know the inherent disposition of God. If people always live in the midst of an abundance of grace, but do not have the way of life that allows them to know God or to satisfy Him, then they will never truly gain Him in their belief in Him. This type of belief is pitiful indeed. ... When you have experienced each step of the work of God incarnate in the Age of Kingdom, you will feel that desires you have had for many years have finally been realized. You will feel that only now have you truly seen God face to face; only now have you gazed upon His countenance, heard His personal utterances, appreciated the wisdom of His work, and truly sensed how real and almighty He is. You will feel that you have gained many things that people in times past had never seen nor possessed. At this time, you will clearly know what it is to believe in God, and what it is to conform to God's will. Of course, if you cling to views of the past, and reject or deny the fact of the second incarnation of God, then you will remain empty-handed, acquiring nothing, and ultimately you will be pronounced**

guilty of opposing God. Those who are able to obey the truth and submit to the work of God shall be claimed under the name of the second incarnate God—the Almighty. They will be able to accept God's personal guidance, gaining more and higher truths, as well as real life" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Faith In God

V. Questions and Answers on the Inside Story of the Bible

Question 1: “All scripture is given by inspiration of God” (2Ti 3:16), Paul’s words are in the Bible. Therefore, they were inspired by God; they are God’s words. Believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible. Regardless of the denomination, if it strays from the Bible, it’s heresy! We believe in the Lord, so we must always act according to the Bible, that is to say, we must keep the words of the Bible. The Bible is Christianity’s canon, the foundation of our faith. Leaving the Bible is not believing in the Lord; if we leave the Bible, how can we believe in the Lord? The Lord’s words are written in the Bible. Is there anywhere else where we can find His words? If our faith in the Lord is not based on the Bible, then what is it based on?

Answer: You say that because Paul’s words are in the Bible, they were inspired by God; they are God’s words. That’s not really proper, is it? Did the Lord Jesus ever say, “All scripture is given by inspiration of God”? Did the Holy Spirit testify to this? No! Well then, can you really say that all the words in the Bible were inspired by God? Anyone familiar with the Bible knows that the words of God conveyed by the prophets are clearly marked. It is clear to see which words were inspired by God and are from God and which are from men. However, none of the words in the epistles of Paul are marked as having been inspired by God and from God. Therefore, how can you say all of Paul’s words are God’s words? Was Paul a prophet? Does the Bible say that Paul was instructed by God to convey His words? We all know that Paul was just an apostle of the gospel. The letters that he wrote to each church were only an attempt to console and encourage his brothers and sisters in times of difficulty. However, these words only represent Paul’s personal experiences and knowledge. They are all the words of a human. How can we say

that those words were inspired by God and came from God? There is one point that we must be clear about. Only God incarnate can express the words of God, because Christ's substance is God Himself. Paul is just a man; he is not Christ. Therefore, regardless of whether Paul's words are recorded in the Bible or not, they are just man's words. This is an undeniable fact! God's words are God's words; man's words are man's words. Man's words can never become God's words. We cannot treat man's words as God's words just because they are in the Bible. If we understand that they are the words of man, but still want to treat them as God's words, are we not distorting the facts and betraying the truth? Is this not resisting God and blaspheming against Him?

Many believers in the religious world think that "Believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible; keeping the Bible is believing in the Lord." Is this view in accordance with the Lord's words? Did the Lord Jesus ever say, "Keeping the Bible is believing in the Lord?" Well according to this viewpoint, "To believe in God is to believe in the Bible. We must always do things according to the Bible. Keeping the Bible is believing in God." The Jewish chief priests, scribes and Pharisees… their faith in God followed the Bible; they kept the Bible, what were the results? When the Lord Jesus appeared and did His work, they did not accept it or obey Him. Instead, they judged and convicted the Lord Jesus based on the fact that His words and work overstepped the law of the Old Testament. They convicted Him of blasphemy based on the fact that He expressed the words of God. They crucified Him on the cross. In light of this fact, do we still dare to say that believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible and keeping the Bible is believing in the Lord? When people put the Bible above

all else, does that mean they fear the Lord and magnify the Lord? When people have blind faith in the Bible and keep the Bible, does that mean they obey the Lord and worship the Lord? Does it mean they follow God's will? Some believers only believe in the Bible and keep the Bible; they cannot magnify the Lord or practice and experience His words, nor do they search for the truth, obey God's work or follow His footsteps. These people even fanatically resist and condemn God's work based on the literal words of the Bible. Are they not hypocritical Pharisees? Are they not antichrists who take God as their enemy? The Lord Jesus once rebuked the Pharisees, "Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life" (Jhn 5:39–40). The Lord Jesus exposed the Pharisees' flawed method of faith very clearly. The Pharisees' faith in God was only based on the Bible. They did everything according to the Bible. They put the Bible above everything else; they thought that keeping the Bible would give them eternal life. However, they did not accept the truth expressed by the Lord Jesus. They preferred keeping the Bible over following the Lord Jesus. They stubbornly clung to the Bible and tried to use literal interpretations of its text to attack the Lord Jesus. They denied and condemned the truths expressed by the Lord Jesus. In the end, they crucified Him on the cross. That is why they were cursed and punished. Therefore, we can see that if a believer only believes in and worships the Bible, but denies Christ incarnate and rejects the work and leadership of God, they will definitely not obtain God's praise.

Let's read two passages of Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**From the time when there was the Bible, people's**

belief in the Lord has been the belief in the Bible. Instead of saying people believe in the Lord, it is better to say they believe in the Bible; rather than saying they have begun reading the Bible, it is better to say they have begun believing in the Bible; and rather than saying they have returned before the Lord, it would be better to say they have returned before the Bible. In this way, people worship the Bible as if it were God, as if it were their lifeblood, and losing it would be the same as losing their life. People see the Bible as being as high as God, and there are even those who see it as higher than God. If people are without the work of the Holy Spirit, if they cannot feel God, they can carry on living—but as soon as they lose the Bible, or lose the famous chapters and sayings from the Bible, then it is as if they have lost their life" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**They believe in My existence only within the scope of the Bible, and they equate Me with the Bible; without the Bible there is no Me, and without Me there is no Bible. They pay no heed to My existence or actions, but instead devote extreme and special attention to each and every word of Scripture. Many more even believe that I should not do anything I wish to do unless it is foretold by Scripture. They attach too much importance to Scripture. It can be said that they see words and expressions as too important, to the extent that they use verses from the Bible to measure every word I say and to condemn Me. What they seek is not the way of compatibility with Me or the way**

of compatibility with the truth, but the way of compatibility with the words of the Bible, and they believe that anything that does not conform to the Bible is, without exception, not My work. Are such people not the dutiful descendants of the Pharisees? The Jewish Pharisees used the law of Moses to condemn Jesus. They did not seek compatibility with the Jesus of that time, but diligently followed the law to the letter, to the extent that—after having charged Him with not following the law of the Old Testament and not being the Messiah—they ultimately nailed the innocent Jesus to the cross. What was their substance? Was it not that they didn't seek the way of compatibility with the truth? They obsessed over each and every word of Scripture while paying heed neither to My will nor to the steps and methods of My work. They were not people who sought the truth, but people who rigidly clung to words; they were not people who believed in God, but people who believed in the Bible. Essentially, they were watchdogs of the Bible. In order to safeguard the interests of the Bible, to uphold the dignity of the Bible, and to protect the reputation of the Bible, they went so far as to nail the merciful Jesus to the cross. This they did merely for the sake of defending the Bible, and for the sake of maintaining the status of each and every word of the Bible in people's hearts. So they preferred to forsake their future and the sin offering to condemn Jesus, who did not conform to the doctrine of Scripture, to death. Were they not all lackeys to

each and every word of Scripture?" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God's words expose the greatest deviations and errors in the religious communities' faith in God to us. Compared to our own past experiences in the faith, it looks like we have believed in the Lord for many years but never really practiced or experienced His words. We also never searched for the truth in the Lord's words or obtained the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit. We definitely never focused on finding the Lord's will within His words. The result is that we never followed the Lord's way and never really knew the Lord. We just thought that if we could memorize some biblical passages, God would have a place in our hearts; we thought if we could explain a few sentences from the Bible, it would mean that we knew God. We even falsely thought that as long as we could explain the Bible and memorize a lot of text, we would be most in accordance with God's will. All believers put the Bible above everything else. In their hearts, the Bible has already replaced the Lord. Everyone thinks that exalting and keeping the Bible is exalting and bearing witness to the Lord. In reality, these actions completely stray from the Lord's will and way. This is especially true during the key period of the Lord's appearance and work in the last days. Many believers still cling to the Bible and wait until they see the Lord descend with the clouds with their own eyes. However, they do not search for the Holy Spirit's work and utterance. Even though they've heard the witness of the Church of Almighty God that the Lord has returned and He is Almighty God and is expressing truth and doing His work of judgment in the last days, they do not search for God's appearance and work. They even follow religious pastors and elders

in denying, judging and condemning Almighty God. They have become those who believe in God and yet resist God. Eventually, they will be forsaken by God, thrown into the great disaster and punished. This is what happens when people blindly believe in and worship the Bible, confine God within the limits of the Bible, and unconsciously walk the path of resistance against God. The Pharisees were cursed by God because they clung to the Bible and resisted the Lord Jesus. What lessons can we learn from their failure? It is absolutely wrong for believers to keep the words of the Bible. We must practice and experience the Lord's words. We must search for the truth in the Lord's words and obtain the work of the Holy Spirit. This is especially true when the Lord returns. When we hear someone bear witness to the Lord's arrival, we must search for the present work and words of God. This way, we will be able to follow the footprints of God's work; we will be raptured before God's throne, enjoy the supply of the water of life, obtain the truth and life, receive salvation and enter the kingdom of heaven.

In reality, before God spoke or started His new work, our belief in the Lord according to the Bible was not wrong. This is because the Bible is a witness to God; it is the true collection of God's words and work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. We who read the Bible become aware of God's existence. We learn about God's almightiness and wisdom, how He created the heavens and earth and all other things, and how He rules over everything. We can see what God said and did during the previous two stages of His work, His wishes and demands on mankind, His many actions revealed to humanity, etc. Correct! In particular, the Bible contains the Lord Jesus' work of redemption during the Age of Grace, the abundant

grace and truth He gave to humanity, allowing us to see God's true love and mercy toward humanity. If we did not have the writings of the Bible, it would be hard for us to understand God's past work. Therefore, the Bible has become a necessary, classic book for us believers. The Bible is so valuable for us to believe in God, acknowledge God and walk the right path of life. However, regardless of how valuable the Bible is or how much it has given humanity, the Bible does not represent God or the work of the Holy Spirit, much less does it stand in for God in the work of salvation. Isn't this true? God is the Lord of creation, the source of all life. God gives humanity a steady stream of life that is inexhaustible. However, the Bible is just a historical book about God's past work. How can it be on par with God? The Bible is the Bible. God is God. The Bible and God are two different. Believing in the Bible does not mean you believe in God! Therefore, our faith in God can't just be based on the Bible. The most important thing is to base our faith on what God actually says and what the Holy Spirit does. This is the most important principle when it comes to faith in God! If we don't even understand this basic fact about faith in God, aren't we too foolish and ignorant? This is just as it was in the Age of Grace, when the Lord Jesus appeared and did His work. Could man obtain the work of the Holy Spirit if they just read the Old Testament, but did not accept the words and work of the Lord Jesus? Could they obtain the Lord Jesus' salvation and grace? Obviously not! Then, when the Lord Jesus has returned in the last days as Almighty God, and is expressing truth and doing His work of judgment, can we who only keep the Bible and the Lord Jesus' work obtain the work of the Holy Spirit and God's salvation of the last days? Therefore, when Almighty God does His new work in the last

days, we must seek the truth in His words, listen to His voice, follow the footsteps of His work, and experience the judgment and chastisement of His words. Only by experiencing God's work like this can we obtain the truth, know God and achieve purification and salvation. This kind of faith is the only way to obtain God's praise.

Excerpted from the movie script of Faith in God

Question 2: Paul made it very clear in (2Ti 3:16) “the entire Bible is inspired by God”, so that all words in the Bible are God's words, and that the Bible represents God, We are going by Paul's words. How can this be wrong?

Answer: Many people in religious circles believe that the Bible is inspired by God. They believe what Paul said about this. But no one investigates whether Paul had any basis for this statement. They have such a view all because they worship Paul too much and have too much blind faith in Paul. Has anyone considered whether Paul’s statement conforms with God’s word? Is it supported by the words of the Lord Jesus? Are there words of the Holy Spirit as proof? People use Paul’s words to blindly conclude that the Bible is entirely inspired by God. Does this conform with the Lord’s word, conform with the truth? If this statement by Paul is corroborated by the words of the Lord Jesus or the Holy Spirit, then we should accept and obey that, which is completely in line with the Lord’s intentions. But we all know very clearly that Paul used to resist God and oppose the Lord Jesus. It’s a recognized fact that he was the ringleader of the opposition against the Lord Jesus’ work. Even though the Lord Jesus chose Paul as an apostle to spread the gospel, Paul is still a created creature. Therefore, his words are undoubtedly all the words of a man. The Lord Jesus is God, while all of the Lord Jesus’ apostles and disciples are men. The apostles and disciples of the Lord Jesus cannot be compared to the Lord Jesus Himself. If they are not supported by the words of the Lord Jesus or the Holy Spirit, then no matter what man says, we cannot accept them blindly. Otherwise the consequences will be unimaginable. Thinking back to the time when the Pharisees resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus, many people

rejected the Lord Jesus because they followed the Pharisees. They were eliminated and condemned precisely because they resisted the Lord Jesus. Have we not absorbed these lessons? Actually, in the Bible, only the words of Jehovah God, the words spoken by the Lord Jesus, the words of the Holy Spirit, the words of God conveyed by the prophets, and the prophecies in the Book of Revelation, are God's word. Apart from that, it's all the records and letters of man. These all count as testimonies of God's work and have a need to be recorded in the Bible, but we must not treat man's words as the word of God. Man's words are man's words, and only God's words are truly the word of God. If we insist that the words of man and Satan in the Bible are the word of God, then that's slandering and blaspheming God! Therefore, the saying that "All scripture is inspired by God and is all the word of God", does not conform with the facts.

Let's read a passage of Almighty God's word. "**In fact, apart from the books of prophecy, most of the Old Testament is a historical record. Some of the epistles of the New Testament come from people's experiences, and some come from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit; the Pauline epistles, for example, arose from the work of a man, they were all the result of the Holy Spirit's enlightenment, and they were written for the churches, and were words of exhortation and encouragement for the brothers and sisters of the churches. They were not words spoken by the Holy Spirit—Paul could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit, and neither was he a prophet, much less did he see the visions that John beheld. His epistles were written for the churches of Ephesus, Philadelphia, Galatia,**

and other churches. And thus, the Pauline epistles of the New Testament are epistles that Paul wrote for the churches, and not inspirations from the Holy Spirit, nor are they the direct utterances of the Holy Spirit. … He did the work of an apostle of the churches of that time, he was a worker who was used by the Lord Jesus, and thus he must take on the responsibility for the churches, and must undertake the work of the churches, he had to learn about the states of the brothers and sisters—and because of this, he wrote epistles for all of the brothers and sisters in the Lord. All he said that was edifying and positive to people was right, but it did not represent the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and it could not represent God. It is an egregious understanding, and a tremendous blasphemy, for people to treat the records of a man's experiences and a man's epistles as the words spoken by the Holy Spirit to the churches! … If people see the epistles or words like Paul's as the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and worship them as God, then it can only be said that they are too indiscriminating. To speak more harshly, is this not simply blasphemy? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And how could people bow down before the records of his epistles and of the words he spoke as if they were a holy book, or a heavenly book? Could the words of God be casually uttered by a man? How could a man talk on behalf of God?" ("Concerning the Bible (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

The words of Almighty God make it very clear. The Bible contains not only the word of God, but also the words of various people. This is the truth and we should respect it, make distinctions, and treat the Bible correctly. But many believers still believe in the Bible blindly and worship the Bible. They all believe Paul's statement that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God." They think as long as it is recorded in the Bible it should be the word of God, and treat the various words of man as well as Satan as God's words. What kind of problem is this? Is this not resisting and blaspheming God? All words spoken by man are clearly marked in the Bible as man's words. Why do people have to insist that they are God's words? Is it that man's words will become God's words if they are compiled into the Bible? What kind of logic is that? The Bible also includes the words of the ancient serpent, words of Satan. Do people dare say that these are also God's words? It shows that all those who think everything in the Bible is all the word of God are completely absurd! Even if people don't understand the truth they should at least respect facts. They shouldn't be turning things upside down.

We all know that only God's word is the truth, the way, and the life. Words spoken by man that conform with the truth all come from their experience and knowledge of God's word. But even with the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, they are still man's words, and cannot be compared with the word of God. The word of God is the expression of God's disposition and all that He has and is. It is the reality of positive things and can be man's life. Words spoken by man that conform with the truth all come from man's experience and understanding of God's word and the truth, and all represent the stature of man at the time. But we should be

clear that the truth of God's words can never be fully experienced by man. No matter how deep their knowledge of God's word and the truth, they cannot reach the original essence of the truth. That is to say, words spoken by man that conform with the truth cannot be equated to the truth. Man's being able to speak words that conform with the truth does not mean that man is possessed of the truth. Moreover, it does not represent that man is the truth. This is because the Holy Spirit bases His work on man's actual stature, enlightening and guiding man to gradually understand the truth and enter the reality. Therefore, the words that conform with the truth spoken by those used by God all are limited experience and understanding of the truth and are very different to the essence of the truth. The words that conform with the truth can only provide people with a bit of help and benefit. They cannot be man's life and cannot be compared to God's word. Almighty God says, "**Words enlightened by the Holy Spirit do not represent the words of God, they do not represent the truth, they do not belong to the truth; they are merely a little knowledge of the truth, a little of the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit. ... The truth is the life of God Himself; it represents His disposition, His essence, and everything in Him**" ("Do You Know What the Truth Really Is?" in Records of Christ's Talks). Therefore, the words of God and the words of man in the Bible cannot be confused. The preaching of many religious pastors are based not on the word of God but on the words spoken by man in the Bible. They regard man's words in the Bible as the truth and make people practice and comply with them. This makes it easy to create confusion, because man's words cannot be man's life and only God's words can be man's life. Pastors always

treat man's words in the Bible as the truth and make people practice and enter them. Isn't that putting the cart before the horse? Is this exalting God and bearing witness to God? Further, the words "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" were spoken by Paul. God has never witnessed to the Bible in this way and the Holy Spirit has never said such words. Moreover, no prophets or apostles have said such words. The words "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" as spoken by Paul can only represent his personal view and are not supported by the word of God. Therefore, for people to think that the Bible is entirely inspired by God, that it is all the word of God, and that the Bible represents God, all of this is incredibly wrong. We should see this fact clearly and treat the Bible correctly. That way, God will be satisfied.

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Shackles and Run

Question 3: We think all of God's word and work are recorded in the Bible. There's no word and work of God apart from the Bible. Therefore, our faith in God must be based on the Bible. Is that wrong?

Answer: Many believers in religious circles feel that: "God's word and work are all recorded in the Bible. There is no word or work of God apart from the Bible." Does this saying conform with the facts? Do you dare say that every single piece of work performed by Jehovah in the Age of Law is entirely recorded in the Bible? Can you guarantee that all of the word and work of the Lord Jesus in the Age of Grace are entirely recorded in the Bible? What is the outcome if this view does not conform with the facts? Would it not make people look down on God, delimit God, and blaspheme God? Isn't it something that offends God's disposition? We should know that the Bible is compiled by people who serve God many years after God completed each stage of His work. It is inevitable that some content was missed or deleted. That's a fact. There are some words of prophets that are not recorded in the Old testament but are instead collated into the Deuterocanonical books. In the New Testament, there are not many words of the Lord Jesus recorded in the Four Gospels. In fact, the Lord Jesus had preached and worked for at least three years. The words He uttered exceed what is recorded in the Bible many times over. That is a fact no one can deny. As stated in the Bible: "And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written" (Jhn 21:25). There are also some letters of the apostles not recorded in the Bible. When the Lord Jesus returns, He will still have to utter many

more words and perform much more work. Could these things be recorded in the Bible? The Bible has only recorded the prophecy of the Lord Jesus' return, not His word and work following His return. That is to say, the word of God recorded in the Bible is limited. These words are essentially a drop in the sea of God's life, only a ten-thousandth, a trillionth of God's life. Given these facts, how can people still say that God's word and work are all recorded in the Bible? How could they say that there is no word or work of God apart from the Bible? Such statements are too arbitrary! They don't conform with the facts at all. Many people use such statements to conclude that the Bible is the basis of man's faith in God. This conclusion is not accurate. It is right for man to rely on the Bible as a basis for their faith in God, but the Bible alone is not enough. The most important thing is to walk the path of belief in God based on the work of the Holy Spirit. That is how to achieve God's approval. If the Bible is the only basis and there is no work of the Holy Spirit, will man be able to understand the truth in the Bible? Will man be able to achieve understanding of God? If people have errors in understanding God's word and don't have the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit, doesn't that make it easy to go astray? These are all real problems. If believers in God don't have the work of the Holy Spirit, they will never be able to gain the truth, and moreover won't be able to achieve understanding of God. If believers in God don't have the work of the Holy Spirit, Even if they often read the Bible and listen to sermons, they still won't be able to understand the truth and enter into reality. It shows that people who believe in God without the work of the Holy Spirit won't be able to achieve anything at all.

Many religious pastors and theological professors use the human mind to explain the Bible, and end up all becoming people who resist God. They're just like the Pharisees, who were also familiar with the Bible and observed some of its rules, but had no knowledge of God whatsoever. They appeared godly outside but had no reverence for God whatsoever. When the Lord Jesus appeared to do His work, they even used the Bible to resist and condemn Him, and were cursed by God as a result. What kind of problem is this? Can man's faith in God be solely based on the Bible or not? The bitter lesson of the Pharisees tells us that basing our faith in God on the Bible alone is not enough, and that the most important basis is the work of the Holy Spirit. Without the work of the Holy Spirit, it is no use no matter how many years people believe in God—they won't be able to gain life. This is a fact nobody can deny. This shows that the statement, "Faith in God must be based on the Bible, departing from the Bible is not believing in God," is an incorrect and absurd viewpoint. The word of God in the Bible clearly states: "**Not by might, nor by power, but by my spirit, said Jehovah of hosts**" (Zec 4:6). There are also the words in Psalms: "Except Jehovah build the house, they labor in vain that build it: except Jehovah keep the city, the watchman wakes but in vain" (Psm 127:1). These two passages are both classic lines of the Bible. You could say that all believers know these two passages of scripture. Can man's faith in God be solely based on the Bible or not? The answer should be clear. The main basis for belief in God is the work of the Holy Spirit and God's actual words. That is how to gain the truth and life. Many people don't understand the Bible, always thinking that eternal life is in the Bible and that simply holding on to the Bible will

accomplish everything. That's an extremely absurd view. The Lord Jesus has said before, "**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life**" (Jhn 5:39–40). "**I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man comes to the Father, but by me**" (Jhn 14:6). Believers should know very well in their hearts that God is the Lord of creation. God is in charge of all things, dominates all things, and is the source of life for all things. There is infinite wisdom and wonder in God. The Bible is merely a historical record of God's work, a testimony to the first two stages of God's work. The Bible is the Bible. God is God. The Bible and God are two different things and cannot be compared. The Bible cannot represent God, and moreover cannot save man in God's stead. Only God can save man. If the Bible could save man, the Israelites have held firm to the Bible, blindly believed in and worshiped the Bible for thousands of years, yet why do they still need the Messiah to come and save them? If the Bible could save man, then why did the Pharisees who held fast to the Bible still condemn and resist the Lord Jesus, and become antichrists in enmity to God? This is sufficient to demonstrate that the Bible cannot save man. The Bible is merely a testimony to God. If we only hold on to the Bible but do not obey God's work, we will not be able to receive God's salvation. Since we believe in God, we should obey God's work, and experience and practice God's word, so that we may receive the work of the Holy Spirit, and gain the truth and life. That is why the Bible can only serve as a reference for our faith in God and cannot be the sole basis. Faith in God should be based on God's actual words and the work of the Holy Spirit. That is the most

important principle of believing in God. We are really too foolish and ignorant if we cannot see through this commonsense knowledge. Treating the Bible as an idol or using the Bible to replace the Lord is purely resisting God and blaspheming God. If we blindly believe in and worship the Bible but cannot magnify and obey the Lord, then how could we possibly be true believers? How are we any different to the hypocritical Pharisees? This shows that if we believe in God but don't understand the inner truth of the Bible and the relationship between the Bible and God, it will be too easy for us to deviate from the true way and be led astray.

Let's read another few passages of Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**The Bible is nothing more than a historical record of God's work, and a testament to the previous two stages of God's work, and that it offers you no understanding of the aims of God's work. Everyone who has read the Bible knows that it documents the two stages of God's work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. The Old Testament chronicles the history of Israel and Jehovah's work from the time of creation until the end of the Age of Law. The New Testament records Jesus' work on earth, which is in the Four Gospels, as well as the work of Paul—are these not historical records?**" ("Concerning the Bible (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**If you wish to see the work of the Age of Law, and to see how the Israelites followed the way of Jehovah, then you must read the Old Testament; if you wish to understand the work of the Age of Grace, then you must read the New Testament. But how do you see the work of**

the last days? You must accept the leadership of the God of today, and enter into the work of today, for this is the new work, and no one has previously recorded it in the Bible. Today, God has become flesh and selected other chosen ones in China. God works in these people, He continues on from His work on earth, and continues on from the work of the Age of Grace. The work of today is a path that man has never walked, and a way that no one has ever seen. It is work that has never been done before—it is God's latest work on earth. Thus, work that has never been done before is not history, because now is now, and has yet to become the past." "**From the time when there was the Bible, people's belief in the Lord has been the belief in the Bible. Instead of saying people believe in the Lord, it is better to say they believe in the Bible; rather than saying they have begun reading the Bible, it is better to say they have begun believing in the Bible; and rather than saying they have returned before the Lord, it would be better to say they have returned before the Bible. In this way, people worship the Bible as if it were God, as if it were their lifeblood, and losing it would be the same as losing their life. People see the Bible as being as high as God, and there are even those who see it as higher than God. If people are without the work of the Holy Spirit, if they cannot feel God, they can carry on living—but as soon as they lose the Bible, or lose the famous chapters and sayings from the Bible, then it is as if they have lost their life.**" "**After all, which is greater: God or the Bible? Why must God work according to the**

Bible? Could it be that God has no right to exceed the Bible? Can God not depart from the Bible and do other work? Why did Jesus and His disciples not keep the Sabbath? If He were to keep the Sabbath and practice according to the commandments of the Old Testament, why did Jesus not keep the Sabbath after He came, but instead washed feet, covered head, broke bread, and drank wine? Is this not all absent from the commandments of the Old Testament? If Jesus honored the Old Testament, why did He break with these doctrines? You should know which came first, God or the Bible! Being the Lord of the Sabbath, could He not also be the Lord of the Bible?" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The Bible has been a part of human history for several thousand years. People, furthermore, treat it like God, to the extent that in the last days, it has taken the place of God, which disgusts God. Thus, when time permitted, God felt obliged to clarify the inside story and origins of the Bible; were He not to do this, the Bible would continue to hold the place of God in people's hearts, and people would use the words of the Bible to measure and condemn the deeds of God. By explaining the essence, the structuring, and the flaws of the Bible, God was by no means denying the existence of the Bible, nor was He condemning it; rather, He was providing an appropriate, fitting description that restored the original image of the Bible, addressed the misunderstandings that people had toward the Bible, and gave them the correct view of the Bible, so**

that they no longer worshiped the Bible, and were no longer lost; which is to say, so that they would no longer mistake their blind faith in the Bible as faith in God and the worship of God, afraid even to confront its true background and failings. … If people cannot escape the trap of the Bible, they will never be able to come before God. If they wish to come before God, they must first cleanse their hearts of anything that could replace Him; then they will be satisfactory to God. Although God only explains the Bible here, do not forget that there are many other erroneous things that people genuinely worship aside from the Bible; the only things that they do not worship are those that truly come from God. God merely uses the Bible as an example to remind people not to take the wrong path, and not to go to extremes again and fall prey to confusion while they believe in God and accept His words" (Introduction to The Words of Christ As He Walked in the Churches in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God's words have clearly revealed that the Bible is only a testimony to God, a record of the first two stages of God's work. The value and preciousness of the Bible lies in the words of God in the first two stages of His work as recorded in it. This allows all mankind to see through the word of God in the Bible how God created all things, how He created mankind, how He guided mankind, and how He redeemed mankind, helping people achieve some understanding of God. It is due to the records in the Bible that many people have turned to God. They not only have accepted that God created all things, but also hunger for God's word and search for

God's footsteps. These are all benefits and edification the Bible has brought to mankind, and also where the value of the Bible lies. But God's work is always progressing forward. The purpose of saving mankind is not achieved after only the first two stages of work are completed. God's management plan is a three-stage work. If we merely cling to the Bible but refuse to accept God's work of the last days outside of the Bible, then that would be such a tremendous loss! God's work of cleansing, saving, and perfecting mankind is mainly achieved through His judgment work of the last days. That is why all truths expressed by God in the last days are so important to our purification, salvation, and entry into the kingdom of heaven. Why did the Lord Jesus prophesy that when He returns, all those who accept Him will go to the supper? The Lord said, "**Blessed are they which are called to the marriage supper of the Lamb**" (Rev 19:9). "**Behold, I stand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will sup with him, and he with me**" (Rev 3:20). We're all clear that this marriage supper means that God will truly gain man and perfect man, making man be of one mind with Him, never to part again. This is why Almighty God of the last days expresses all the truth for cleansing and saving man. Those who accept and obey after hearing God's voice are all wise virgins. They are raptured before the throne to attend the marriage supper of the Lamb, and enjoy the supply of the water of life flowing from God's throne. Through experiencing God's judgment and cleansing in the last days, they will escape the bondage of sin to achieve change, and be made into overcomers by God. They are the most blessed people, and also the people who will receive eternal life and enter the kingdom of

heaven. If people only base their belief in God on the Bible and remain stuck in the Bible's letters and religious rules, marching on the same spot by only sticking to the first two stages of God's work, then that will make it easy for them to be abandoned and cast off by the pace of God's work, losing them the chance to be cleansed, saved, and perfected by God in the last days. This completely severs them from God's salvation work. All their efforts will come to naught and they will be eliminated by God. In God's eyes, they are all people who have betrayed Him. They are all unbelievers who belong with the evildoers. In the end, they are all like the Pharisees of old, who were cursed and punished by God because they stubbornly held on to the Old Testament and resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus. Just as the Lord Jesus said, "**Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in your name? and in your name have cast out devils? and in your name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess to them, I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7:21–23). Evidently, this will be the outcome for people who hold on to the Bible and refuse to accept the work of God in the last days.

Let's take another look at Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last**

days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history. Those who are controlled by regulations, by letters, and shackled by history will never be able to gain life nor gain the perpetual way of life. This is because all they have is turbid water which has been clung to for thousands of years instead of the water of life that flows from the throne. Those who are not supplied with the water of life will forever remain corpses, playthings of Satan, and sons of hell. How, then, can they behold God? If you only try to hold on to the past, only try to keep things as they are by standing still, and do not try to change the status quo and discard history, then will you not always be against God? The steps of God's work are vast and mighty, like surging waves and rolling thunders—yet you sit passively awaiting destruction, clinging to your folly and doing nothing. In this way, how can you be considered someone who follows the footsteps of the Lamb? How can you justify the God that you hold on to as a God who is always new and never old? And how can the words of your yellowed books carry you across into a new age? How can they lead you to seek the steps of God's work? And how can they take you up to heaven? What you hold in your hands are letters that can provide but temporary solace, not truths that are capable of giving life. The scriptures you read can only enrich your tongue and are not words of wisdom that can help you know human life, much less the paths that can lead you to

perfection. Does this discrepancy not give you cause for reflection? Does it not make you realize the mysteries contained within? Are you capable of delivering yourself to heaven to meet God on your own? Without the coming of God, can you take yourself into heaven to enjoy family happiness with God? Are you still dreaming now? I suggest, then, that you stop dreaming and look at who is working now—look to see who is now carrying out the work of saving man during the last days. If you do not, you shall never gain the truth, and shall never gain life" ("Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Shackles and Run

Question 4: You have testified that the incarnate Almighty God has expressed millions of words and performed His work of judgment beginning from the house of God. This clearly exceeds the Bible. The pastors and leaders used to often tell us that all of God's word and work is in the Bible. There is no word and work of God outside of the Bible. The salvation work of the Lord Jesus has already been completed. The Lord's return in the last days will be to take believers directly up into the kingdom of heaven. So all along, we've believed that belief in the Lord must be based on the Bible. As long as we stick to the Bible we will be able to enter the kingdom of heaven and receive eternal life. Moving away from the Bible is leaving the Lord's way. It's resisting Him and betraying Him. What could be wrong with that?

Answer: In religion, all those who believe in the Lord think that all of God's word and work is contained in the Bible. God's salvation in the Bible is complete, and there is no word and work of God outside of the Bible. Belief in the Lord is to be based on the Bible and sticking to the Bible. As long as we don't leave the Bible, when the Lord comes we will be taken up into the kingdom of heaven. Such a viewpoint might conform with people's notions and imaginations, but is it based on the words of the Lord Jesus? Can you guarantee it conforms with the truth? The Lord Jesus has never said that God's word and work are all recorded in the Bible, that there is no word and work of God outside of the Bible. This is true. People who understand the Bible all know that the Bible was put together by mankind many years after God's work. God's work came first, and then the Bible. In other words, every time God completed a stage of His work, those who experienced God's work would record down

God's word and work from that time, and these records were compiled by people into the Bible. When we think about it, how could the work God has not yet done be compiled into the Bible in advance? God's judgment work of the last days, in particular, could not possibly have been recorded in the Bible. The New and Old Testaments have been part of the Bible for nearly 2000 years. Almighty God has only just started His judgment work of the last days. Therefore, the word and work of God in the last days could not possibly have been recorded in the Bible thousands of years ago. Isn't that a fact? In the last days, Almighty God has performed the work of judgment beginning from the house of God, expressing several million words. These words are all truths that purify and save mankind, and are the way to eternal life brought by Christ of the last days. They have already been compiled into the Bible of the Age of Kingdom. This is the book, "The Word Appears in the Flesh." Though the truths expressed by Almighty God were not recorded in the Bible in advance, they have completely fulfilled the Lord Jesus' prophecies. "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth**" (Jhn 16:12–13). "**He that has an ear, let him hear what the Spirit said to the churches**" (Rev 2:17). The truth expressed by Almighty God has completely verified that Almighty God is the embodiment of the Spirit of truth. He is the incarnate God. All words expressed by Almighty God, that is, the expressions of the Spirit of truth in the last days, are words from the Holy Spirit to the churches. Do we dare say these are not the words of God? Do we still dare deny this? If we see the reality of God's speaking and working in the last days, would we still say all of

God's words are recorded in the Bible and that there is no word and work of God outside of the Bible? We don't understand the inside story of how the Bible was formed. We don't know the fact that the Bible was formed only after God completed each stage of His work, and yet we arbitrarily conclude and determine that there is no word and work of God outside of the Bible. Aren't we quite arbitrary and absurd? If we do not understand how the Bible was formed and its inside story, it can be very easy to deviate on the path to believing in God. In fact, during the two stages of God's work in the Age of Law and the Age of Grace, all of the words expressed by God were not completely recorded in the Bible. For instance, in the Age of Law, there were some prophets whose prophecies were not recorded in the Bible. In the Age of Grace, there were even more words spoken by the Lord Jesus. But the words recorded in the Bible are too limited. Just think. The Lord Jesus preached on earth for three-and-a-half years. How many words would He have spoken each day? How many words would He have spoken each sermon? There were way too many sermons and words spoken by the Lord Jesus in those three-and-a-half years. There is no way anyone would be able to calculate it. Just as John the Apostle said: "And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written" (Jhn 21:25). Let's now look at the Four New Testament Gospels. The words of the Lord Jesus recorded in these are too limited! It's only the tip of the iceberg! If the Lord Jesus had only said those few words in the Four Gospels during those three-and-a-half years, how would He have been able to conquer the people who followed Him at the time? How would the work of the

Lord Jesus have been able to shake up all of Judea? Therefore, it is certain that the words of God recorded in the Bible contain only a very limited portion, certainly not all the words spoken by God during His work. This is a fact nobody can deny! We all know that God is the Lord of creation, the source of mankind's life, the wellspring of living water that never runs dry. God's richness is inexhaustible in supply and always available for use, whereas the Bible is merely a record of the first two stages of God's work. The amount of God's word that is recorded is far too limited. It's like a drop in the sea of God's life. How could we delimit God's word and work to just the Bible? It's as though God could only say those limited words in the Bible. Isn't this delimiting, belittling and blaspheming God? Therefore, to delimit all of God's word and work to the Bible and to think that there is no word and work of God outside of the Bible is a major mistake!

let's next read a few passages of Almighty God's words, and we'll be even clearer on this aspect of the truth. Almighty God says, "**The things that are recorded in the Bible are limited; they cannot represent the work of God in its entirety. The Four Gospels have fewer than one hundred chapters altogether, in which are written a finite number of happenings, such as Jesus cursing the fig tree, Peter's three denials of the Lord, Jesus appearing to the disciples following His crucifixion and resurrection, teaching about fasting, teaching about prayer, teaching about divorce, the birth and genealogy of Jesus, Jesus' appointment of the disciples, and so forth. However, man values them as treasures, even comparing the work of today against them. They even believe that all**

the work Jesus did in His life amounted only to so much, as if God were only capable of doing this much and nothing further. Is this not absurd?" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**After all, which is greater: God or the Bible? Why must God work according to the Bible? Could it be that God has no right to exceed the Bible? Can God not depart from the Bible and do other work? Why did Jesus and His disciples not keep the Sabbath? If He were to keep the Sabbath and practice according to the commandments of the Old Testament, why did Jesus not keep the Sabbath after He came, but instead washed feet, covered head, broke bread, and drank wine? Is this not all absent from the commandments of the Old Testament? If Jesus honored the Old Testament, why did He break with these doctrines? You should know which came first, God or the Bible! Being the Lord of the Sabbath, could He not also be the Lord of the Bible?**" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The fact I wish to explain here is this: What God is and has is eternally inexhaustible and infinite. God is the source of life and all things; He cannot be fathomed by any created being. Lastly, I must continue to remind everybody: Do not delimit God in books, in words, or in His past utterances ever again. There is only one word to describe the characteristic of God's work: new. He does not like to take old paths or repeat His work; moreover, He does not want people to worship Him by delimiting Him**

within a certain scope. This is God's disposition" (Afterword to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Spell

Question 5: Paul made it very clear in 2 Timothy that "the entire Bible is inspired by God" (2Ti 3:16), This means that every word in the Bible is the word of God, and that the Bible represents the Lord. Believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible. Believing in the Bible is believing in the Lord. Moving away from the Bible means not believing in the Lord! Our belief in the Lord only requires us to hold firm to the Bible. Even if we do not accept Almighty God's work in the last days, we'll still be able to be saved and enter the kingdom of heaven. Is there anything wrong with this understanding?

Answer: The majority of the religious world rely on the words of Paul that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" in determining that everything in the Bible is the word of God, and that as long as one holds on to the Bible they will be taken up into the kingdom of heaven. Especially in the last days, most believers in the Lord still believe in this. But is this viewpoint in conformity with the truth and facts? Did the Lord Jesus ever say "All scripture is given by inspiration of God"? Did the Holy Spirit ever testify to this? They did not. This was said by Paul. Many believers use these words from Paul as the basis of their belief that every word in the Bible is inspired by God and is the word of God. Is this not a huge mistake? Some people also believe that even if spoken by a human being, it is the word of God as long as it is recorded in the Bible. Isn't such a viewpoint very fallacious and absurd? Believers in the Lord should all be very clear that the Bible is just a testimony of God and a record documenting God's work. The creation of the Bible was based on the work of God's salvation of mankind. Every stage of God's work is filled with the battle between God and the evil forces of Satan, which is why God's word is not the only thing recorded in the Bible, as there are also

words from various people and even Satan. This is a clear fact. Is it a tenable argument to say that every word of the Bible is the word of God? Isn't this distorting the truth and confounding black and white? How can people still develop such erroneous beliefs? Why can't they speak according to the facts? Anyone who has read the Bible knows that the Bible contains conversations between God and Moses, between God and Job, between God and His chosen people, and between God and Satan. So could the words spoken by the person God is conversing with become the word of God? Isn't that too absurd? Therefore, the saying that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God and is the word of God" cannot possibly be tenable! Some absurd people have arbitrarily insisted that man's word in the Bible is the word of God. This is completely at odds with the truth. This purely tarnishes God, blasphemes against God, and seriously offends God's disposition! God's words are God's words, man's words are man's words, and Satan's words are Satan's words. Why do people mix them up? God's words will always be the truth. Man's words can never be the truth and at most can only conform with the truth. Satan's words will always be falsehoods and lies. Even if uttered ten thousand times, they will still be lies and falsehoods! Wise people should admit this fact. Only foolish people will insist on false viewpoints. We will be even clearer on this issue after reading another passage of Almighty God's words.

Almighty God says, "**Today, people believe the Bible is God, and that God is the Bible. So, too, do they believe that all the words of the Bible were the only words God spoke, and that they were all said by God. Those who believe in God even think that, although all of the sixty-six books of**

the Old and New Testament were written by people, they were all given by inspiration of God, and a record of the utterances of the Holy Spirit. This is the erroneous comprehension of man, and it does not completely accord with the facts. In fact, apart from the books of prophecy, most of the Old Testament is a historical record. Some of the epistles of the New Testament come from people's experiences, and some come from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit; the Pauline epistles, for example, arose from the work of a man, they were all the result of the Holy Spirit's enlightenment, and they were written for the churches, and were words of exhortation and encouragement for the brothers and sisters of the churches. They were not words spoken by the Holy Spirit—Paul could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit, and neither was he a prophet, much less did he see the visions that John beheld. His epistles were written for the churches of Ephesus, Philadelphia, Galatia, and other churches. And thus, the Pauline epistles of the New Testament are epistles that Paul wrote for the churches, and not inspirations from the Holy Spirit, nor are they the direct utterances of the Holy Spirit. ... If people see the epistles or words like Paul's as the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and worship them as God, then it can only be said that they are too indiscriminating. To speak more harshly, is this not simply blasphemy? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And how could people bow down before the records of his epistles and of the words he spoke as if they

were a holy book, or a heavenly book? Could the words of God be casually uttered by a man? How could a man talk on behalf of God?" ("Concerning the Bible (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Many believers think that "The Bible represents God, represents the Lord Believing in the Bible is believing in the Lord, believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible." Such a viewpoint doesn't sound wrong, but for people who have experience, such a viewpoint is wrong in itself. This shows that people believe in God but don't know God, and moreover aren't clear on the relationship between the Bible and God. If anyone still insists that the Bible represents God and believing in the Bible is believing in God, then let me ask you: Does the Bible save people or does God save people? Can the Bible replace God to do His work? Can the Bible replace the work of the Holy Spirit? God created the heavens and earth and all things. Can the Bible create the heavens and earth and all things? Is God greater or the Bible greater? Did God come first or did the Bible come first? Has everybody considered these questions? If people still can't see through these common sense things that believers must understand, then are they people who experience God's work? Haven't they experienced any of the Holy Spirit's work at all? Don't they have any knowledge of God's almightiness and wisdom? We all know that God is the one true God, the Lord of creation. God can speak words, created the heavens and earth and all things, and rules over all things. God is Spirit, and yet He can become flesh as the Son of man to speak and work among man, redeem man, and save man. God is real and alive, the Almighty, who is, and who was, and who is to come. The Bible, on the other hand, is merely a record documenting

the two stages of God's work in the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. It is a history book. How can the Bible possibly compare to God? That is why, no matter from which perspective, the Bible cannot represent God, believing in the Bible is not believing in God, and clinging to the Bible is not following God. The Bible is the Bible, God is God. The Bible and God are completely separate things. This is a fact that no one can refute!

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Spell

Question 6: You communicate the Bible is the Bible, God is God. I understand that the Bible cannot represent God at all. But just what is the relationship between the Bible and God? I still don't get it.

Answer: The Lord Jesus has explained this question very clearly. John 5:39–40: "**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life.**" The Lord Jesus explained the relationship between the Bible and God very clearly. The Bible is a testimony of God. The Bible itself does not have eternal life and cannot bestow life on man. Only Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. Therefore, only by accepting and following Christ and obeying the words and work of God of the last days, can we gain the truth and eternal life. Let's take another look at how there are still many people in religious circles who still maintain that "Believing in the Lord is believing in the Bible, departing from the Bible means not believing in the Lord." They even think that as long as they stick to the Bible they can be brought up into the kingdom of heaven. Isn't this viewpoint too absurd? Actually, the Bible is just a history book, a record documenting God's work. If people don't understand this and keep holding on to the Bible, then let me ask: Can the Bible replace God's work of the last days? Can the Bible replace Christ in expressing the truth? Can one really gain the truth and life by studying and sticking to the Bible? If people stubbornly hold on to the Scriptures like the Pharisees, does it prove that they follow and obey God? If people only hold on to the Bible but don't accept or obey the work of Christ in the last days, then how can they gain the truth and life, achieve salvation, be perfected, and enter God's kingdom? Let's read a few more passages of Almighty

God's words and we'll understand this aspect of the truth even more clearly!

Almighty God says, "**From the time when there was the Bible, people's belief in the Lord has been the belief in the Bible. Instead of saying people believe in the Lord, it is better to say they believe in the Bible; rather than saying they have begun reading the Bible, it is better to say they have begun believing in the Bible; and rather than saying they have returned before the Lord, it would be better to say they have returned before the Bible. In this way, people worship the Bible as if it were God, as if it were their lifeblood, and losing it would be the same as losing their life. People see the Bible as being as high as God, and there are even those who see it as higher than God. If people are without the work of the Holy Spirit, if they cannot feel God, they can carry on living—but as soon as they lose the Bible, or lose the famous chapters and sayings from the Bible, then it is as if they have lost their life**" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**They believe in My existence only within the scope of the Bible, and they equate Me with the Bible; without the Bible there is no Me, and without Me there is no Bible. They pay no heed to My existence or actions, but instead devote extreme and special attention to each and every word of Scripture. Many more even believe that I should not do anything I wish to do unless it is foretold by Scripture. They attach too much importance to Scripture. It can be said that they see words and expressions as too**

important, to the extent that they use verses from the Bible to measure every word I say and to condemn Me. What they seek is not the way of compatibility with Me or the way of compatibility with the truth, but the way of compatibility with the words of the Bible, and they believe that anything that does not conform to the Bible is, without exception, not My work. Are such people not the dutiful descendants of the Pharisees? The Jewish Pharisees used the law of Moses to condemn Jesus. They did not seek compatibility with the Jesus of that time, but diligently followed the law to the letter, to the extent that—after having charged Him with not following the law of the Old Testament and not being the Messiah—they ultimately nailed the innocent Jesus to the cross. What was their substance? Was it not that they didn't seek the way of compatibility with the truth? They obsessed over each and every word of Scripture while paying heed neither to My will nor to the steps and methods of My work. They were not people who sought the truth, but people who rigidly clung to words; they were not people who believed in God, but people who believed in the Bible. Essentially, they were watchdogs of the Bible. In order to safeguard the interests of the Bible, to uphold the dignity of the Bible, and to protect the reputation of the Bible, they went so far as to nail the merciful Jesus to the cross. This they did merely for the sake of defending the Bible, and for the sake of maintaining the status of each and every word of the Bible in people's hearts. So they preferred to forsake their future and the sin

offering to condemn Jesus, who did not conform to the doctrine of Scripture, to death. Were they not all lackeys to each and every word of Scripture?

And what of people today? Christ has come to release the truth, yet they would rather expel Him from this world so that they may gain entry into heaven and receive grace. They would rather completely deny the coming of the truth in order to safeguard the interests of the Bible, and they would rather nail the Christ returned to flesh to the cross again in order to ensure the everlasting existence of the Bible. How can man receive My salvation when his heart is so malicious and his nature so antagonistic toward Me?" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God's words have clearly exposed the religious leaders who simply exalt the Bible and bear witness to the Bible but never exalt or bear witness to God, and also exposed the truth and essence of their using the Bible to replace God and impersonate God and their using the words of the Bible to resist and condemn God's work, completely exposing their truth-hating and God-opposing satanic nature. Think back to the time when the Pharisees stubbornly held on to the Scriptures and delimited God within the Scriptures. They never sought the truth or God's footsteps. Even though the Lord Jesus, when preaching and doing His work, expressed many truths and performed many signs and wonders, already demonstrating God's authority and power, what did the Pharisees do? They didn't care how profound the Lord Jesus' preaching was or how great His authority was. As long as it did not conform with the words of the

Scriptures, they would furiously condemn and resist the Lord Jesus. And because the Lord Jesus expressed the word of God, they condemned and blasphemed the words of the Lord Jesus as blasphemy, and in the end nailed the merciful Lord Jesus to the cross alive, completely exposing their truth-hating and God-opposing satanic nature. Today, religious pastors and elders are just like the Pharisees of old. They do all they can to exalt and bear witness to the Bible, but never exalt or bear witness to the Lord, and moreover don't proclaim and bear witness to the words of the Lord and all the truths expressed by the Lord. They specialize in talking about Bible knowledge and theology, spreading various paradoxical, empty spiritual theories to deceive, control, and bind people, saying, "All of God's utterances and work are recorded in the Bible, there are no utterances and work of God outside of the Bible, Belief in God is belief in the Bible, departing from the Bible means not believing in God, One only needs to hold firm to the Bible to be taken up into the kingdom of heaven," making everyone mistakenly believe that the eternal life is contained in the Bible, and that people only need to stick to the Bible to be able to enter the kingdom of heaven and receive eternal life. Before they knew it, the Bible replaced God's position in people's hearts. Everyone blindly believes in and worships the Bible, and treats the Bible as God. Imperceptibly, the Bible has become a binding spell for believers, and the Lord's position in the hearts of people is completely gone. What would be the consequence of this? People's faith in and knowledge of the Lord are reduced to nothing! This is the consequence of letting religious pastors and elders explain the Bible.

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Spell

Question 7: You testify that the Lord Jesus has already arrived and He is Almighty God. and that He has expressed many truths and is doing the work of judgment of the last days. Is that true? I think this is impossible. We've always maintained that the words and work of God are recorded in the Bible, and that the words and work of God do not exist outside of the Bible. We believe that the Bible already contains the fullness of God's salvation, the Bible represents God. As long as one adheres to the Bible, he will enter into the kingdom of heaven. The Bible already contains the fullness of God's salvation, the Bible represents God. Our belief in the Lord is based on the Bible, straying from the Bible constitutes a denial and betrayal of the Lord! Is there anything wrong with this understanding?

Answer: You said that all of God's words and work are contained within the Bible, that the Bible contains all of God's salvation, and that God's words and work will not appear elsewhere outside the Bible. The whole religious world also believes this. It seems no one can truly ascertain the validity of this view. In the past, we treated all issues according to the Bible. Now let me ask: Does this view of the religious world accord with the Bible? Is it in accord with God's word? The Lord Jesus never said anything of the kind in the Bible. The Holy Spirit also never said anything like this. Actually, this is not such a difficult issue to explain. It can be said with certainty, this notion of the religious world has come completely from the conception and imagination of man. Why do I say this? We all know, the New and Old Testaments of the Bible are only a record of two stages of God's work. As for the words and work of God during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace, do any here dare say that the Bible holds a complete record? Does anyone here dare say that all of

the words of God delivered through the prophets during the Age of Law and all of the Lord Jesus' words during the Age of Grace are recorded in the Bible? Actually, you're all well aware many of the prophets' books in the Age of Law are also not included in the Bible. This is commonly acknowledged! Many of the Lord Jesus' words are not recorded in the Bible. The words of the Lord Jesus recorded in the Bible are just the tip of the iceberg! Just as the Gospel of John: "And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written" (Jhn 21:25). This passage from the Bible clearly states that the Bible is not a record of all of the Lord Jesus' words and work. The Bible is only a very limited account. How could you say that all of God's words and work are recorded in the Bible? Is this not in clear contradiction to fact? In this sense, are you not liars? The Lord Jesus foretold many times that He would come again. How could the words of the returned Lord Jesus be recorded in the Bible ahead of time? That's impossible! We should be very clear. The Bible is a record of God's work in the past. So many years after the writing of the Old Testament, the Lord Jesus came and carried out the work of redemption during the Age of Grace. Tell me, would the Lord Jesus' words automatically get written down in the Bible? That would be impossible! God's words and work had to be compiled before they could be the text in the Bible. In the last days, Almighty God has come to do the work of judgment starting from God's house, and expressed all the truths to purify and save mankind. Could these truths automatically appear in the Bible? Impossible! The Church of Almighty God compiles all the truths expressed by Almighty God into

the Bible of the Age of Kingdom, that is, The Word Appears in the Flesh. This Bible of the Age of Kingdom contains only the expression of God, there is not any of man's words inside. You could say The Word Appears in the Flesh is the eternal way of life gifted to man by God in the last days. This is the precious treasure God has bestowed us. So the view that God's words and work are all recorded in the Bible and that God's words and work will not appear elsewhere outside the Bible is erroneous, absurd and completely the product of man's notions and imaginations.

We can further clarify this issue by reading a few passages of Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**The things that are recorded in the Bible are limited; they cannot represent the work of God in its entirety. The Four Gospels have fewer than one hundred chapters altogether, in which are written a finite number of happenings, such as Jesus cursing the fig tree, Peter's three denials of the Lord, Jesus appearing to the disciples following His crucifixion and resurrection, teaching about fasting, teaching about prayer, teaching about divorce, the birth and genealogy of Jesus, Jesus' appointment of the disciples, and so forth. However, man values them as treasures, even comparing the work of today against them. They even believe that all the work Jesus did in His life amounted only to so much, as if God were only capable of doing this much and nothing further. Is this not absurd?**" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**At the time, Jesus only gave His disciples a series of sermons in the Age of Grace on such subjects as how to**

practice, how to gather together, how to supplicate in prayer, how to treat others, and so forth. The work He carried out was that of the Age of Grace, and He expounded only on how the disciples and those who followed Him ought to practice. He only did the work of the Age of Grace, and none of the work of the last days. … The work of God in each age has clear boundaries; He does only the work of the current age, and never carries out the next stage of work in advance. Only thus can His representative work of each age be brought to the fore. Jesus spoke only of the signs of the last days, of how to be patient and how to be saved, of how to repent and confess, and of how to bear the cross and endure suffering; never did He speak of how man in the last days should achieve entry, nor of how he should seek to satisfy God's will. As such, is it not ridiculous to search the Bible for God's work of the last days? What can you see by merely clutching the Bible? Be it an expositor of the Bible or a preacher, who could have seen the work of today in advance?" ("How Can Man Who Has Delimited God in His Notions Receive the Revelations of God?" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**If you wish to see the work of the Age of Law, and to see how the Israelites followed the way of Jehovah, then you must read the Old Testament; if you wish to understand the work of the Age of Grace, then you must read the New Testament. But how do you see the work of the last days? You must accept the leadership of the God of today, and enter into the work of today, for this is the new**

work, and no one has previously recorded it in the Bible. … The work of today is a path that man has never walked, and a way that no one has ever seen. It is work that has never been done before—it is God's latest work on earth. … Who could have recorded every single bit of today's work, without omission, in advance? Who could have recorded this mightier, wiser work that defies convention, in that moldy old book? The work of today is not history, and as such, if you wish to walk the new path of today, then you must depart from the Bible, you must go beyond the books of prophecy or history in the Bible. Only then will you be able to walk the new path properly, and only then will you be able to enter into the new realm and the new work" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

You say that only by adhering to the Bible may we gain entrance into the kingdom of heaven. Now let me ask: Is there any evidence for this viewpoint in the Bible? Did the Lord Jesus ever say anything to this effect? Did the Holy Spirit ever say this? So where does this idea come from? There is a serious problem with this idea! The Bible was compiled by man, not God. Given that it was compiled by man, naturally some things were left out and errors were made for man had not received God's salvation and perfection, and lacked the truth. Man was incapable of distinguishing what issued from God and what was from man. They were especially incapable of recognizing the deviations in the experiences and testimonies of men. Furthermore, lacking truth and discernment, man often chose what he liked according to his own imagination and notion, and expunged and eliminated that which issued from God but did not fall

in line with his own thinking. He was thus even more prone to make mistakes. So, inevitably, man made mistakes while compiling the Bible. If our belief in God is based solely on the Bible, how can we be sure that we will be saved and enter into the kingdom of heaven? The Lord Jesus never said that only by adhering to the Bible can man enter into the kingdom of heaven. With regard to entering into the kingdom of heaven, the Lord Jesus said plainly: "**Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven**" (Mat 7:21). The Lord Jesus put it very clearly: Only those that do the will of the heavenly Father shall enter into the kingdom of heaven. For those that still insist that only those that adhere to the Bible will enter the kingdom of heaven, let me ask: Does adhering to the Bible equal doing the will of the heavenly Father? Can the Bible stand in for the work of the Holy Spirit? Without the work of the Holy Spirit, can man achieve salvation by adhering to the Bible alone? Through the reading of the Bible alone, can man's corrupt disposition be cleansed? Can his life disposition be changed? By coming to understand the Bible alone, can man know God? As everyone knows, the Pharisees had a very good understanding of the Bible. But why did they nail the Lord Jesus to the cross? When the Lord Jesus came, why did He curse the Pharisees, those great Bible interpreters? Does adhering to the Bible mean you can recognize the voice of God? Does it mean you've been raptured before God's throne? Does it mean you've come to the wedding feast of the Lamb? Do you have an answer for these questions? The Lord Jesus said, "**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you**

will not come to me, that you might have life" (Jhn 5:39–40). You take the Bible as a substitute for the Lord and the words and work of the Lord's second coming. Is that not a betrayal of the Lord? Are you a servant to the Lord or a servant to the Bible? Are you serving the Lord or the Bible? If you don't even understand the relationship between the Bible and the Lord, how do you expect to know Him? The Lord Jesus put it very clearly. You worship and put blind faith in the Bible. You believe that eternal life can be found through the Bible, and yet you fail to obey and worship the Lord. Is this not precisely the path that the Pharisees walked? Did the Pharisees not worship the Bible in place of the Lord? Did they not nail the Lord Jesus to the cross, incurring curses of the Lord? This is fact, there's no denying it! Yet here you say that by adhering to the Bible you will receive entry into the kingdom of heaven, is this not absurd? You've believed in the Lord for years, you've served as elder and pastor and you still hold such absurd views. How are you any different from those hypocritical Pharisees? You've believed in the Lord for years and you still haven't realized the true nature of this issue? After many years of faith, we should come to understand the Lord's will. The Lord has come again in the last days to deliver all saints into the kingdom of heaven. As to how He delivers the saints into the kingdom of heaven, none of us is sure. But the Lord Jesus has said the wise virgins who hear the voice of the bridegroom shall go with the Lord to the feast. This proves that when the Lord comes again in the last days, those who have heard His voice and have gone with Him to the feast shall be delivered into the kingdom of heaven. Those who hear the voice of the Lord are the most blessed. Now let's think for a moment, does reading the Bible by heart mean our ability

to recognize the voice of the Lord? Does reading the Bible by heart mean our knowing the voice of the Lord? The Pharisees were deeply versed in the Bible and often interpreted Bible passages for others, and yet they still nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. What went wrong? Thus, it's clear, only those who love the truth and can hear the voice of God will welcome the Lord, and receive life from Him. Only they shall be delivered to the kingdom of heaven.

Excerpted from the movie script of Who is My Lord

Question 8: For 2,000 years, the religious world has upheld the belief that “the Bible is given by inspiration of God, that it is all God's word”, so the Bible represents the Lord. Those who deny that the Bible is given by inspiration of God and is His word will definitely be condemned and labeled as heretics by the religious world. Is my understanding of this wrong?

Answer: Many people of the religious world believe all the Bible is given by inspiration of God, and is all the word of God. This is clearly a faulty notion! All the epistles and the experiences and testimonies of the apostles contained within the Bible clearly state the author. The Bible is clearly written by people of different ages. How could their testimonies of experience be construed as the word of God? If we go by the religious world’s thinking, the writers of the Bible clearly are all men, but somehow their words become the words of God. What kind of logic is this? The essence of God and that of man are fundamentally different, only God can speak God’s word. And man can only speak human word. If we insist that the word of man is actually God’s word, so let me ask, were all the authors of the Bible God? Who can bear witness to that? Did they claim that they were God? Did they claim that all their words were given by inspiration of God? What do you say to this question? If you claim they were all God, this is in clear contradiction to the facts, because there is only one God. Also, clearly they’re all men, but you insist that they are actually God. This is blasphemous toward God! This is a deadly sin! If you accept that they are all men, but still maintain that their words are all the words of God, this is a distortion of the facts and a misrepresentation. This amounts to opposition to God and blasphemy of Him! Because, within the Bible, apart from Moses and

the prophets, none of the other authors were instructed by God to convey God's word. They also never claimed to have the inspiration of God in their writing. If one has no such evidence but claims that these men were speaking the word of God, he's just shamelessly spouting off nonsense. The authors of the Old and New Testaments were all men used by God. They, experienced the work of God at that time. They had some knowledge of God, and held some burden in their hearts. They set their experiences and testimonies to writing and spread them to the saints of the churches. This is fact. But there were some who felt that these experiences and testimonies was particularly edifying much higher than the testimonies and experiences of the common man, and as a result they mistakenly began to blindly follow and worship them, thinking that their words must have issued from God, because the average person would be incapable of writing such things, so these fallacies and false notions came into being, and these fallacies and false notions spread far and wide and were adopted by many people. In the end, they became conceptions of religious people. The damage caused by all this is nearly inestimable. If Almighty God had not come, who would have realized all this? Despite the fact that many say that all things should be in accord with the Bible and the word of God, no one actually tries to discern all this according to God's words, and, even more so, no one tries to seek the truth and scrutinize the facts with regard to this issue.

Let's read a few passages of Almighty God's word. Almighty God says, "**Today, people believe the Bible is God, and that God is the Bible. So, too, do they believe that all the words of the Bible were the only words God spoke, and that they were**

all said by God. Those who believe in God even think that, although all of the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testament were written by people, they were all given by inspiration of God, and a record of the utterances of the Holy Spirit. This is the erroneous comprehension of man, and it does not completely accord with the facts. In fact, apart from the books of prophecy, most of the Old Testament is a historical record. Some of the epistles of the New Testament come from people's experiences, and some come from the enlightenment of the Holy Spirit; the Pauline epistles, for example, arose from the work of a man, they were all the result of the Holy Spirit's enlightenment, and they were written for the churches, and were words of exhortation and encouragement for the brothers and sisters of the churches. They were not words spoken by the Holy Spirit—Paul could not speak on behalf of the Holy Spirit, and neither was he a prophet, much less did he see the visions that John beheld. His epistles were written for the churches of Ephesus, Philadelphia, Galatia, and other churches. ... If people see the epistles or words like Paul's as the utterances of the Holy Spirit, and worship them as God, then it can only be said that they are too indiscriminating. To speak more harshly, is this not simply blasphemy? How could a man talk on behalf of God? And how could people bow down before the records of his epistles and of the words he spoke as if they were a holy book, or a heavenly book? Could the words of God be casually uttered by a man? How could a man talk on behalf

of God?" "**Not everything in the Bible is a record of the words personally spoken by God. The Bible simply documents the previous two stages of God's work, of which one part is a record of the foretelling of the prophets, and one part is the experiences and knowledge written by people used by God throughout the ages. Human experiences are tainted with human opinions and knowledge, and this is something which is unavoidable. In many of the books of the Bible are human notions, human biases, and humans' absurd comprehension. Of course, most of the words are the result of the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, and they are correct understandings—yet it still cannot be said that they are entirely accurate expressions of the truth**" ("Concerning the Bible (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Having read the words of Almighty God, we can all see the Bible is not entirely given by inspiration of God, is not entirely the word of God. As for what parts of the Bible are God's word and which are the words of men, those with a discerning eye can tell right away. For the name of author is clearly stated for each scripture of the Bible, and it is also clearly stated which parts of the Bible contain the words of God. So how is it that without batting an eye, people continue to take the words of man and of Satan as those of God? Is this a fair way of speaking? If believers in the Lord insist on claiming that the words of men as contained in the Bible are actually the word of God, how do you think God will feel? Is this fair to God? Is this not a defamation, belittlement and blasphemy of God? What is the weight of man's word in the eyes of God? Why don't we take a moment to think? How

can the word of man compare with that of God? The essence of man and that of God are vastly different, so of course the words of man and those of God are even further apart. If, through the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit, man's word can accord with truth, this is already a great achievement. If man's word is not guided by the work of the Holy Spirit, is it not fallacies and lies? If believers in God can't see this, then I'm afraid they are just too foolish and ignorant! Nowadays, the whole religious world takes the words of men within the Bible as those of God. This shows that no one in the religious world truly knows God. Most of the leaders of the religious world are hypocritical Pharisees. Those who truly know God would never believe that the Bible is all given by inspiration of God and is all God's word. They certainly would not blindly worship the Bible and even treat the Bible as God. It is widely held in the religious world that the Bible was all given by inspiration of God and is the word of God, and that the Bible can represent God. This is the most absurdly false notion in all of the religious world.

Excerpted from the movie script of Who is My Lord

Question 9: The Bible is a testimony to the Lord, and the foundation of our faith. These two thousand years, all the believers have based their faith on the Bible. So I believe that the Bible represents the Lord. Believing in the Lord means believing in the Bible, believing in the Bible means believing in the Lord. No matter what, we cannot stray from the Bible. How are we supposed to practice faith without the Bible? Could that even be called faith in the Lord? Tell me, what's wrong with practicing faith in this way?

Answer: Many believe that the Bible represents the Lord, represents God and that belief in the Lord means belief in the Bible, belief in the Bible is the same as belief in the Lord. People afford the same status to the Bible as they do to God. There are even those who acknowledge the Bible without acknowledging God. They think of the Bible as the supreme, and even endeavor to replace God with the Bible. There are even religious leaders who acknowledge the Bible without acknowledging Christ, and claim that those who preach the second coming of the Lord are heretics. Exactly what is the issue here? It’s obvious, the religious world has sunk to the point where they only acknowledge the Bible and fail to believe in the Lord’s return—there’s no saving them. From this it is clear, the religious world has become a group of antichrists, resisting God and taking God as their enemy. It is undeniable that many religious leaders are hypocritical Pharisees. Especially those claiming that “those who preach the second coming of the Lord are heretics,” they are all antichrists and unbelievers. It seems many people don’t know what exactly faith in the Lord is. They call their belief in this vague God the orthodox faith and even believe in the Bible in place of God. They even deny and condemn Christ incarnate of the last days. They

ignore and neglect any truth which Christ expresses. What is the problem here? It's quite a deep question! Back in the days when Jesus did His work, did the Jews not act in just the same way? Before Christ appeared to perform His work, man all based their faith in God on the Bible. No one could tell whose faith was real and whose was false, and certainly no one could tell who was truly obeying God and who was opposing Him. Why was it that when the Lord Jesus Christ became flesh and performed His work, each kind of man was revealed? This is where God's almightiness and wisdom lie. When Almighty God, Christ of the last days, appears and performs His work, the wise virgins hear His voice and see the footprints of God; thus, naturally, they are brought before God's throne. As for those foolish virgins, because they insist on the Bible and fail to recognize that Almighty God, Christ of the last days is indeed God, they are thus revealed and cast off. For now they still hold firm to their so-called faith, but when the disasters come, they will end up with wailing and gnashing of teeth. From this we can see, those that only cling to the Bible and fail to accept the truth, those that only believe in God in heaven but fail to accept the incarnate Christ are all unbelievers and will surely be eliminated by God. This is the truth! Let's see what Almighty God says about this.

Almighty God says, "**From the time when there was the Bible, people's belief in the Lord has been the belief in the Bible. Instead of saying people believe in the Lord, it is better to say they believe in the Bible; rather than saying they have begun reading the Bible, it is better to say they have begun believing in the Bible; and rather than saying they have returned before the Lord, it would be better to**

say they have returned before the Bible. In this way, people worship the Bible as if it were God, as if it were their lifeblood, and losing it would be the same as losing their life. People see the Bible as being as high as God, and there are even those who see it as higher than God. If people are without the work of the Holy Spirit, if they cannot feel God, they can carry on living—but as soon as they lose the Bible, or lose the famous chapters and sayings from the Bible, then it is as if they have lost their life" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**They believe in My existence only within the scope of the Bible, and they equate Me with the Bible; without the Bible there is no Me, and without Me there is no Bible. They pay no heed to My existence or actions, but instead devote extreme and special attention to each and every word of Scripture. Many more even believe that I should not do anything I wish to do unless it is foretold by Scripture. They attach too much importance to Scripture. It can be said that they see words and expressions as too important, to the extent that they use verses from the Bible to measure every word I say and to condemn Me. What they seek is not the way of compatibility with Me or the way of compatibility with the truth, but the way of compatibility with the words of the Bible, and they believe that anything that does not conform to the Bible is, without exception, not My work. Are such people not the dutiful descendants of the Pharisees? The Jewish Pharisees used the law of Moses to condemn Jesus. They did not seek compatibility**

with the Jesus of that time, but diligently followed the law to the letter, to the extent that—after having charged Him with not following the law of the Old Testament and not being the Messiah—they ultimately nailed the innocent Jesus to the cross. What was their substance? Was it not that they didn't seek the way of compatibility with the truth? They obsessed over each and every word of Scripture while paying heed neither to My will nor to the steps and methods of My work. They were not people who sought the truth, but people who rigidly clung to words; they were not people who believed in God, but people who believed in the Bible. Essentially, they were watchdogs of the Bible. In order to safeguard the interests of the Bible, to uphold the dignity of the Bible, and to protect the reputation of the Bible, they went so far as to nail the merciful Jesus to the cross. This they did merely for the sake of defending the Bible, and for the sake of maintaining the status of each and every word of the Bible in people's hearts. So they preferred to forsake their future and the sin offering to condemn Jesus, who did not conform to the doctrine of Scripture, to death. Were they not all lackeys to each and every word of Scripture?

And what of people today? Christ has come to release the truth, yet they would rather expel Him from this world so that they may gain entry into heaven and receive grace. They would rather completely deny the coming of the truth in order to safeguard the interests of the Bible, and they would rather nail the Christ returned to flesh to the cross

again in order to ensure the everlasting existence of the Bible. How can man receive My salvation when his heart is so malicious and his nature so antagonistic toward Me?" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Having read Almighty God's words, let us ponder together: What does it mean to believe in the Lord? What does it mean to believe in the Bible? What is the relationship between the Bible and the Lord? Which came first, the Bible or the Lord? Then who is it that does the work of salvation? Then, can the Bible stand in for the Lord in doing His work? Can the Bible represent the Lord? If people put blind faith in the Bible and worship the Bible, does this mean that they believe in and worship God? Is holding onto the Bible tantamount to practicing and experiencing God's word? Does holding onto the Bible necessarily mean that one is following the Lord's way? So if people place the Bible before everything else, does this mean that they are worshiping the Lord as great, that they are reverent of and obedient to the Lord? No one sees the truth of these issues. For thousands of years, people have been blindly worshiping the Bible and affording the same status to the Bible as they do to the Lord. Some even use the Bible to substitute for the Lord and His work, but no one truly knows the Lord and is obedient to Him. The Pharisees held onto the Bible, yet nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. What was the issue? Does understanding the Bible mean knowing God? Does holding onto the Bible mean following the Lord's way? The Pharisees were experts of biblical exegesis, but they didn't know God. Instead, they nailed the Lord Jesus who expressed the truth and did the redemptive work, to the cross. Have we actually forgotten

this? Exactly what does it mean to really know God? Does just being able to interpret the Bible and understanding the Bible knowledge qualify as knowing God? If that's the case, then why would the Pharisees condemn and oppose the Lord Jesus even as they interpreted the Bible? The key of whether one is able to truly know and obey God is whether or not he knows and obeys the incarnate Christ. God incarnate reveals all of mankind, this is what most people fail to realize. The Lord Jesus' curse on the Pharisees is testament to the fact that God treats everyone with righteousness. As is clear, if one does not obey and worship the Lord but only blindly believes in and worships the Bible, he will not receive God's approval. If man's faith consists solely in abiding by the Bible and their heart has no place for the Lord, if they cannot worship the Lord as great and practice His words, if they are incapable of accepting and obeying God's work and guidance, then, everyone, wouldn't you say that such a man is a hypocritical Pharisee? Is such a man not an antichrist, a man who has made Christ his enemy? For sure! Thus, if man only clings to the Bible, this certainly does not mean that he has gained truth and life. It is wrong to worship and blindly follow the Bible, by doing so one certainly will not receive the Lord's approval. God has become flesh and expressed the truth to purify and save man, and to rescue him from Satan's influence so that he may obey God, worship God and be gained by God in the end. This is the purpose and meaning of God incarnate doing His work. The key to our faith is seeking the truth, and practicing and experiencing the Lord's word. Only in this way will we receive the work of the Holy Spirit and come to know the Lord. Then, we will be able to fear the Lord, and magnify the Lord in our heart. Also, we will have true faith

and obedience in Him. This is the true meaning of our faith in the Lord. Only by practicing faith in this way will we receive the Lord's approval. From this, everyone can plainly see that belief in the Bible is not tantamount to belief in God.

So what is the relationship between God and the Bible? With regard to this question, the Lord Jesus spoke very clearly. "**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life**" (Jhn 5:39–40). From the Lord Jesus' words, it is very clear that the Bible is only a testimony to God, it is merely a record of God's work in the past. The Bible does not represent God, because the Bible only contains a limited account of God's words and work. How can this limited account of God's words and work represent God? God is the Creator who fills all in all, He is the Master of all things. God's life is unlimited and inexhaustible. God's abundance, greatness man can never fathom. And the limited record of God's words and work found in the Bible is but a drop in the vast sea of God's life. How could the Bible represent God? How could the Bible be on a par with God? God can do work to save man, can the Bible do work to save man? God can express the truth, can the Bible do that? God can enlighten, illuminate and guide man at any time, can the Bible do it? Of course not! So, the Bible cannot represent God! Man places the Bible on a par with God and thinks that the Bible can represent God. Is this not a belittlement and blasphemy of God? If man uses the Bible in place of God's work, this is a denial and betrayal of God. God is God, the Bible is the Bible. The Bible cannot represent God, nor can it stand in place of God's work. The Bible is just a record of God's work. The words of God within the

Bible are truth. They are a manifestation of the life disposition of God, and can show God's will. But each stage of God's work only represents God's requirement and will for mankind during that age. They do not represent the words and work of God in other ages.

With regard to the inside story of the Bible, I think we can have a look at a passage from Almighty God. Almighty God says, "**No one knows the reality of the Bible: that it is nothing more than a historical record of God's work, and a testament to the previous two stages of God's work, and that it offers you no understanding of the aims of God's work. Everyone who has read the Bible knows that it documents the two stages of God's work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. The Old Testament chronicles the history of Israel and Jehovah's work from the time of creation until the end of the Age of Law. The New Testament records Jesus' work on earth, which is in the Four Gospels, as well as the work of Paul—are these not historical records?**" ("Concerning the Bible (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**What they recorded, it can be said, was according to their level of education and human caliber. What they recorded was the experiences of men, and each had their own means of recording and knowing, and each record was different. Thus, if you worship the Bible as God you are extremely ignorant and stupid! Why do you not seek the work of the God of today? Only the work of God can save man. The Bible cannot save man, people could read it for several thousand years and still there would not be the slightest change in them, and if you worship the Bible you**

will never gain the work of the Holy Spirit" ("Concerning the Bible (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**People's approach to the Bible is one of obsession and faith, and no one can be entirely clear about the inside story or essence of the Bible. So, today people still have an indescribable sense of wonder when it comes to the Bible, and they are even more obsessed with it, and have even more faith in it. ... With such blind faith in the Bible, with such trust in the Bible, they have no desire to seek the work of the Holy Spirit. In people's notions, they think that only the Bible can bring the work of the Holy Spirit; only in the Bible can they find the footsteps of God; only in the Bible are hidden the mysteries of God's work; only the Bible—not other books or people—can clarify God's everything and the entirety of His work; the Bible can bring the work of heaven to earth; and the Bible can both begin and conclude the ages. With these notions, people have no inclination to search for the work of the Holy Spirit. So, regardless of how much of a help the Bible was to people in the past, it has become an obstacle to God's latest work. Without the Bible, people can search for the footsteps of God elsewhere, yet today, His footsteps have been contained by the Bible, and extending His latest work has become doubly difficult, and an uphill struggle. This is all because of the famous chapters and sayings from the Bible, as well as the various prophecies of the Bible. The Bible has become an idol in people's minds, it has become a puzzle in their brains, and they are simply incapable of believing that God can work**

outside of the Bible, they are incapable of believing that people can find God outside of the Bible, much less are they able to believe that God could depart from the Bible during the final work and start anew. This is unthinkable to people; they cannot believe it, and neither can they imagine it. The Bible has become a great obstacle to people's acceptance of God's new work, and a difficulty to God's broadening this new work." "**After all, which is greater: God or the Bible? Why must God work according to the Bible? Could it be that God has no right to exceed the Bible? Can God not depart from the Bible and do other work? Why did Jesus and His disciples not keep the Sabbath? If He were to keep the Sabbath and practice according to the commandments of the Old Testament, why did Jesus not keep the Sabbath after He came, but instead washed feet, covered head, broke bread, and drank wine? Is this not all absent from the commandments of the Old Testament? If Jesus honored the Old Testament, why did He break with these doctrines? You should know which came first, God or the Bible! Being the Lord of the Sabbath, could He not also be the Lord of the Bible?**" ("Concerning the Bible (1)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Seeking and exploring the truth with regard to the question of whether the Bible can represent God and what relationship is between the Bible and God is of the utmost importance. First we must come to know: What kind of God is God? Only God can save mankind and guide mankind. Only God can determine the fate of mankind. This is a widely acknowledged fact. Now let's think over

this: How was the Bible made? After God had finished His work, the men used by Him wrote down their testimonies and experiences, and these testimonies and experiences were later compiled to make the Bible. That's why we can state with great certitude that the Bible is merely a record of God's work in the past, it is nothing more than a testimony to God's work. The Bible cannot represent God, nor can it stand in place of God to do the work of saving man. If man's faith is based only on reading the Bible and not on experiencing God's work, he will never receive the work of the Holy Spirit and be saved. Why do I say this? Because God's work of salvation is an ongoing development. Thus, we shouldn't fixate on one or two stages of God's work. We must follow the footsteps of God's work until God completes His work of saving mankind. Only in this way can we receive God's full salvation and enter into the pleasant destination of mankind. God's management plan of salvation includes three stages of work: the work of the Age of Law, the Age of Grace, and the Age of Kingdom. Now everyone understands that the Age of Law was the time when God used laws to guide the life of man. The Age of Grace was when God did the redemptive work on mankind. The Lord Jesus was nailed to the cross so as to redeem mankind from the domain of Satan, pardon them from their sins, and qualify them to come before God, pray to God, and commune with Him. As for the work of judgment in the Age of Kingdom, this is the very work to thoroughly cleanse, save, and perfect all of mankind. If mankind only passes through the work of the Age of Law and the Age of Grace but fails to accept God's judgment in the last days, they will not be thoroughly saved and gained by God. Why is this? We can all see that in the Age of Grace the Lord Jesus' work was only to redeem mankind. In this

age, believing in the Lord only allowed us to be forgiven of our sins, be qualified to pray to God, and enjoy all of God's grace, but we failed to attain purity during this age. Because we have sinful nature within us, and often commit sins, rebel against and oppose God, the Lord Jesus promised that He shall come again, and express all the truths that save mankind in the last days to purify all those who hear the voice of God and are brought before God's throne. Just as the Lord Jesus foretold: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12–13). Almighty God's words and work are a complete fulfillment of the verse in John: "**when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth.**" So Almighty God is the return of the Lord Jesus. Almighty God is currently engaged in the work of judgment in the last days, and is purifying and perfecting all those who have come before His throne, that is, perfecting those wise virgins who have returned toward Him after hearing His voice to be overcomers so as to bring them into the kingdom of God. The fact of God doing three stages of work for salvation allows us to see that God has always been working to guide and save mankind. Each stage of God's work is more elevated and more profound than the last. As for the Bible, it's no more than a must book for us God's followers. The Bible cannot do the work of God, to guide and save mankind.

The Bible is just a record of God's work. When God had completed a work, man recorded His words and work and compiled them to make the Bible. Though the Bible is indispensable to man's

faith, only by receiving the work of the Holy Spirit can man truly understand the Bible and the truth. This is fact. So, faith in the Lord requires us to follow the footsteps of the Lamb closely, accept and obey God's work of judgment in the last days. Only in this way can we receive the work of the Holy Spirit and God's salvation and perfection. If we only read the Bible but fail to accept the words and work of God in the last days, we cannot be purified and saved. Actually, even if all of God's words were recorded in the Bible, without the work of the Holy Spirit, we would still be incapable of understanding and knowing God's word. To understand the truth, we must experience and practice the words of God, we must receive the enlightenment and illumination of the Holy Spirit. Only thus can we understand God's word, understand the truth, enter into the reality of the truth and be perfected by God. With regard to this, we need to understand a fact: As a believer, what is the key to our salvation? The key is the work of the Holy Spirit, the perfection of the Holy Spirit. Now, who is the Holy Spirit? Is the Holy Spirit not just God Himself? The Bible is just a record of God's work in the past. So how could it possibly stand in for God Himself? So as I've said, only God can save man, the Bible is incapable of saving man. If our faith consists only in adhering to the Bible and not in accepting the words and work of God in the last days, if we don't follow the steps of God's work, we will be abandoned and eliminated. In the Age of Law, there were many that failed to accept the work of the Lord Jesus, they were eliminated. Those who believe in the Lord Jesus but fail to accept the work of Almighty God in the last days will also be abandoned and eliminated. It can be said that these people are blind and do not

know God. All that is left for them is to bear the brunt of the coming disasters, wailing and gnashing their teeth.

The work of judgment done by Almighty God in the last days through expressing the truth is the core work in God's management plan to save all of mankind. It is also the last stage of God's work to thoroughly purify, save and perfect mankind. So if believers only keep to the first two stages of work described in the Bible but fail to accept the work of purification and salvation done by Christ of the last days, they will never be saved and enter into the kingdom of God. No matter how many years these people have faith in the Lord, it will all be for naught, because all those that reject the end-time salvation of Almighty God are opponents of God, they are all hypocritical Pharisees. There is absolutely no question about this. Even though the Pharisees rejected the Lord Jesus on the basis of the Bible and in the last days, the elders and pastors reject the work of Almighty God on the basis of the Bible, their arguments do not hold up. Because they do not base their arguments on God's word, but on the letter of the Bible. As far as God is concerned, no matter how many reasons one may have, anyone who fails to accept the work of Almighty God in the last days is an opponent and betrayer of God. In God's eyes, they are all evil-doers, God will never acknowledge them. These antichrists and unbelievers exposed by the work of God in the last days will have to bear the punishment of the disasters to come with wailing and gnashing of teeth. They have all been cast off and eliminated by God forever, and will never again have the opportunity to see God and receive His approval. This is fact. Here, we can come to understand a fact: The Bible just cannot represent God, and certainly cannot stand in for God's work. God is God, the Bible is the

Bible. So, since we believe in God, we must experience God's work and follow the pace of God's work, we must eat and drink the words God expresses in the last days, and we must accept and follow all the truths that God expresses. This is the true meaning of faith in God. Every time that God becomes flesh to work, He has to cast off and eliminate those who only adhere to the Bible but fail to know and obey God. So, we can say with confidence, "Faith in God must be in line with the Bible, abiding by the Bible is true faith in God, the Bible represents God," these assertions are pure fallacy. Anyone who makes such assertions is blind and does not know God. If man were to put the Bible above all else and use the Bible in place of God, would he not be walking down the path of the Pharisees? That's just what the Pharisees did... The Pharisees adhered to the Bible in opposition to God, as a result they met with God's curses. Is this not fact?

Excerpted from the movie script of Who is My Lord

VI. Questions and Answers on God's Work of Judgment in the Last Days

Question 1: You bear witness that the Lord Jesus has returned as none other than Almighty God who has expressed the truth in doing judgment work in the last days. How could it be possible? The Lord will actually come to bring us into the kingdom of heaven, how could He leave us behind to do judgment work in the last days? I think by believing in the Lord Jesus and receiving the Holy Spirit's work, we have already been experiencing God's judgment work. There is proof in the Lord Jesus' word: "**if I go not away, the Comforter will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send him to you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment**" (Jhn 16:7–8). We think that after the Lord Jesus resurrected and ascended to heaven, at Pentecost the Holy Spirit descended to work on people. That had already made people blame themselves for their sins, for righteousness and judgment. When we confess and repent before the Lord, we are actually experiencing the judgment of the Lord. the work of the Lord Jesus was redemption work, after the Lord Jesus ascended to heaven, the work done by the Holy Spirit who descended at Pentecost should be the judgment work of God in the last days. Had it not been the judgment work, how could it be "**he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment**"? Besides, as believers of the Lord, we are often touched, reprimanded and disciplined by the Holy Spirit. So, in front of the Lord, we are always crying and repenting to the Lord. The many good behaviors engendered are how we have been transformed by our faith in the Lord. Is it not the result of experiencing God's judgment? The judgment work of Almighty God in the last days that you talk about, how does it differ from the work of the Lord Jesus?

Answer: Since you recognize what the Lord Jesus did was the work of redemption, and the way He brought is "**Repent you: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**" (Mat 4:17). then what did you base upon to determine that the Holy Spirit came at Pentecost to do the work of judgment in the last days? You only based on the Lord Jesus' word that said, "**for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come to you; but if I depart, I will send him to you. And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgment**" (Jhn 16:7–8). You dare to be certain that the work done by the Holy Spirit was the judgment work in the last days, is there any basis according to God's word? The Lord Jesus had never said that. The Lord Jesus said explicitly, "**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day**" (Jhn 12:47–48). The Lord Jesus made it very clear that what He did was not judgment work. The Lord Jesus will only express the truth to do the judgment work when He returns in the last days. To be sure, it is wrong for some people to refer to the work of the Holy Spirit in the Age of Grace as the judgment work of God. Of course, when we confess our sins and repent before the Lord, we must have the moving and work of the Holy Spirit to receive the grace of God, to enjoy peace and joy. But when someone repents to the Lord, breaks down in tears, it only means that he is moved by the Holy Spirit. The achieved effect is to make man confess and repent and qualify to enjoy the grace of God. It is not the effects achieved by the judgment of God in the last days

—to be cleansed and made perfect. The work of the Holy Spirit in the Age of Grace is different from the work of the Holy Spirit in the last days. This is directly related to the effect and purpose God intends to achieve in every stage of His work. Let us hear two passages of Almighty God's word and we will understand what judgment is.

Almighty God says: "**At the mention of the word 'judgment,' you are likely to think of the words that Jehovah spoke to all the places and the words of rebuke that Jesus spoke to the Pharisees. For all their severity, these words were not God's judgment of man; they were but words spoken by God within different environments, that is, in different contexts. These words are unlike the words spoken by Christ as He judges man during the last days. In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words,**

but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God. ...

The work of judgment is God's own work, so it must naturally be carried out by God Himself; it cannot be done by man in His stead. Because judgment is the use of the truth to conquer humankind, there is no question that God would still appear in the incarnate image to perform this work among man. That is to say, in the last days, Christ shall use the truth to teach people across the world and make all truths known to them. This is God's work of judgment" ("Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God has clearly expounded what judgment is and the effects of judgment work. The judgment work of God in the last days is to thoroughly cleanse and save mankind. It is not simply to say a few reprimanding or imprecating words to man. Nor can the expression of a few passages of words release people from the bondage of sin to receive cleansing and salvation of God. God needs to express enough words to explain all aspects of the truth that the corrupt mankind should understand and enter in order to receive cleansing and salvation, and disclose all the mysteries of His management plan to mankind. This is hundreds, even thousands of times, more than the words expressed by the Lord Jesus in the Age of Grace. The judgment work of God in the last days is focused on expressing the truth and the word of judgment, to judge and expose man's satanic nature that resists and betrays God, and the truth of man's corruption by Satan, completely revealing the holy, righteous and unoffendable disposition of God. All aspects of the truth about God's intention and requirements of mankind, what kind of people will receive salvation or punishment, and so on, are disclosed to us. By experiencing God's judgment work in the last days, we understand the purpose of God's management plan. We can distinguish between positive and negative things, and clearly see the demonic face of Satan who insanely resists God. We see through the fact of man's profound corruption by Satan and recognize our satanic nature that resists and betrays God. Pertaining to God's righteous disposition, omnipotence, wisdom, and all about God's possessions and being, we receive some true understanding and beget a God-fearing heart. We fall to the ground in shame, feeling that we are unworthy of living before God. We despise and forsake ourselves, we

gradually detach from the binding of sin, living out the likeness of a real man and becoming truly fearful of and obedient to God. These are the effects of experiencing the judgment work of God in the last days. Only this kind of work is the judgment work of God in the last days.

Let us then look at the Age of Grace. The Lord Jesus only did the work of redemption and preached the way of repentance, showing only the merciful and loving sides of God's disposition to man. Although the Lord Jesus also said some words to judge man, condemn and curse the Pharisees, these were not the focus of His work. The Lord Jesus only did the redemption work which was centered upon forgiveness of sins, teaching of repentance and bestowal of grace. It was not the work that centered upon judging and cleansing the sins of man. So the work of the Lord Jesus only revolved around the work of redemption and He expressed limited words that taught man how to repent and confess sins, how to be humble and patient, how to get baptized, bear the cross, suffer, etc. By believing in the Lord, we only need to go by the Lord's word to confess and repent, then our sins would be forgiven. We would no longer be convicted by law and sentenced to death. We would be qualified to pray to God and enjoy God's grace and blessings. These were the effects achieved by the redemption work of God in the Age of Grace, which were completely different from those of the judgment work in the last days. However, some people believe that, by experiencing the work of the Holy Spirit in the Age of Grace and receiving the enlightenment, reprimand and discipline of the Holy Spirit, by being able to pray in tears, confess sins, and behave well, it is actually the experience of God's judgment and cleansing. I ask you

then, do we know the root of our own sins? Do we know the essence of our own satanic nature that resists God? Do we know the truth about man's profound corruption? Do we clearly see the evil essence of Satan? Do we know the righteous, majestic and unoffendable disposition of God? Are we truly detached from the binding and control of sins? Has our satanic disposition been cleansed? Have we become reverent and obedient to God? If we haven't accomplished these, how could we be said to have experienced God's judgment and cleansing? The work of the Lord Jesus in the Age of Grace was not the judgment work. The work of Almighty God in the Age of Kingdom is the judgment work of God in the last days.

Excerpted from the movie script of My Dream of the Heavenly Kingdom

Question 2: You have witnessed the Lord Jesus has returned to express the truth and do judgment work in the last days. Why didn't I see it? I just believe that the Lord will return on the clouds; I just believe that when the Lord returns, all those who believe in Him will be instantly changed and be lifted in the air to meet with the Lord. Just as Paul said, "For our conversation is in heaven; from where also we look for the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like to his glorious body, according to the working whereby he is able even to subdue all things to himself" (Phl 3:20–21). And you say the Lord's return is to become flesh, appear as the Son of man and express the truth to do judgment work in the last days. I think it's impossible! Since God is omnipotent, a single word of God created the heavens and earth and all things, and let the dead rise again. God can turn us into holiness with one word. Why does God have to become flesh to express the truth to do the work of judging and cleansing man?

Answer: God's work is always unfathomable. No one can clearly explain God's prophecies. Man can only understand a prophecy when it is fulfilled. What does this mean? It means that no one can fathom the wisdom and omnipotence of God. When the Lord Jesus appeared to work in the Age of Grace, no one could fathom it. When Almighty God does judgment work of the last days in the Age of Kingdom, no one can know it in advance either. Therefore, mankind finds it so inconceivable about God becoming flesh in the last days to express the truth and do judgment work. But when the work of God is done, the catastrophe will arrive. At that time, many people will sense that God's word has all been fulfilled. But it will be too late to regret. They can only wail and grind their teeth amid the

catastrophe. About how God does His work of judgment in the last days to cleanse and save man, how to make a group of overcomers—the firstfruits, it will be even clearer after we read a few passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says: "**You should be able to see the will of God, and should see that the work of God is not as simple as the creation of the heavens and earth and all things. That is because the work of today is the transformation of those who have been corrupted, who are numb to the utmost degree, it is to purify those who were created but processed by Satan. It is not the creation of Adam or Eve, still less is it the creation of the light, or the creation of every plant and animal. God makes pure the things that have been corrupted by Satan and then gains them anew; they become things that belong to Him, and they become His glory. This is not as man imagines, it is not as simple as the creation of the heavens and the earth and everything in them, or the work of cursing Satan to the bottomless pit; rather, it is the work of transforming man, turning things that are negative, and do not belong to Him, into things that are positive, and do belong to Him. This is the truth behind this stage of God's work. You must understand this, and avoid oversimplifying matters. The work of God is unlike any ordinary work. Its wonderfulness and wisdom are beyond the mind of man. God does not create all things during this stage of work, but nor does He destroy them. Instead, He transforms all the things He created, and purifies all the things that have been defiled by Satan. And**

thus does God embark upon a great enterprise, which is the entire significance of the work of God. Is the work of God that you see in these words really so simple?" ("Is the Work of God As Simple As Man Imagines?" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The flesh of man has been corrupted by Satan, and it has been most deeply blinded, and profoundly harmed. The most fundamental reason why God works personally in the flesh is because the object of His salvation is man, who is of the flesh, and because Satan also uses the flesh of man to disturb the work of God. The battle with Satan is actually the work of conquering man, and at the same time, man is also the object of God's salvation. In this way, the work of God incarnate is essential. Satan corrupted the flesh of man, and man became the embodiment of Satan, and became the object to be defeated by God. In this way, the work of doing battle with Satan and saving mankind occurs on earth, and God must become human in order to do battle with Satan. This is work of the utmost practicality**" ("Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Earliest mankind was in the hands of God, but because of Satan's temptation and corruption, man was bound up by Satan and fell into the hands of the evil one. Thus, Satan became the object to be defeated in the work of God's management. Because Satan took possession of man, and because man is the capital which God uses to carry out all management, if man is to be saved, then he must be**

snatched back from the hands of Satan, which is to say that man must be taken back after having been held captive by Satan. Thus, Satan must be defeated through changes in man's old disposition, changes which restore man's original sense of reason. In this way, man, who has been taken captive, can be snatched back from the hands of Satan. If man is freed from the influence and bondage of Satan, then Satan will be shamed, man will ultimately be taken back, and Satan will be defeated. And because man has been freed from the dark influence of Satan, man will become the spoils of this entire battle, and Satan will become the object to be punished once the battle has finished, after which the entire work of mankind's salvation will have been completed" ("Restoring the Normal Life of Man and Taking Him to a Wonderful Destination" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**In the work of the last days, the word is mightier than the manifestation of signs and wonders, and the authority of the word surpasses that of signs and wonders. The word exposes all the corrupt dispositions buried deep in the heart of man. You have no way of recognizing them on your own. When they are laid bare before you through the word, you will naturally come to discover them; you will not be able to deny them, and you will be utterly convinced. Is this not the authority of the word? This is the result achieved by the work of the word today. Therefore, it is not through the healing of sickness and casting out of demons that man can be fully saved from his sins, nor can he be made fully**

complete by the manifestation of signs and wonders. The authority to heal sickness and cast out demons only gives man grace, but the flesh of man still belongs to Satan and the corrupt satanic disposition still remains within man. In other words, that which has not been made clean still pertains to sin and to filth. Only after he has been made clean through the agency of the word can man be gained by God and become sanctified. ... By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan,**

and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" ("Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**God does the work of judgment and chastisement so that man may gain knowledge of Him, and for the sake of His testimony. Without His judgment of man's corrupt disposition, man could not possibly know His righteous disposition, which brooks no offense, and nor would man**

be able to turn his old knowledge of God into a new one. For the sake of His testimony, and for the sake of His management, He makes His entirety public, thus enabling man, through His public appearance, to arrive at knowledge of God, to be transformed in his disposition, and to bear resounding testimony to God. The transformation of the disposition of man is achieved through many different kinds of God's work; without such changes in his disposition, man would be unable to bear testimony to God and to be after God's heart. The transformation of man's disposition signifies that man has freed himself from Satan's bondage and from the influence of darkness, and has truly become a model and specimen of God's work, a witness of God, and one who is after God's heart" ("Only Those Who Know God Can Bear Testimony to God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Those who are able to stand firm during God's work of judgment and chastisement during the last days—that is, during the final work of purification—will be the ones who will enter into the final rest alongside God; as such, all those who enter into rest will have broken free of Satan's influence and been obtained by God after having undergone His final work of purification. These humans, who will have been finally obtained by God, will enter into the final rest. The essential purpose of God's work of chastisement and judgment is to purify humanity and to prepare them for their ultimate rest; without such cleansing, none of humanity could be classified into**

different categories according to kind, or enter into rest. This work is humanity's only path to enter into rest" ("God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

In the last days, God becomes flesh to express the truth and do judgment work to cleanse and make perfect man instead of transforming him with one word. There are truth and mystery within! The way God cleanses and makes man perfect by His work of judgment in the last days is absolutely not as simple as we imagine. With one word, the Lord Jesus raised Lazarus from the dead. But for God to cleanse and transform mankind that has been utterly corrupted by Satan to resist and act against God into a mankind that understands, obeys and worships God, to transform a mankind that has been corrupted into living devils for millennia into a mankind with the truth and humanity in twenty or thirty years, it is a process of battling Satan. Is this a simple matter? If God raises the dead and transforms our body with one word, can this humiliate Satan? In the last days, mankind has been corrupted by Satan for millennia. The nature and disposition of Satan have been ingrained in man. Mankind is arrogant, selfish, deceitful, evil and greedy. For fame and fortune, they plot against each other, deceive and slaughter each other. Mankind loathes and detests the truth. They have become the enemy of God from early on. They are the ilk of Satan who resist and betray God. God's salvation for man is actually a battle with Satan. Just as Almighty God says, "**The flesh of man has been most profoundly corrupted, and it has become something which opposes God, so much so that it even openly opposes and denies the existence of God. This corrupt flesh is simply too**

intractable, and nothing is more difficult to deal with or change than the corrupt disposition of the flesh. Satan comes into the flesh of man to stir up disturbances, and it uses the flesh of man to disturb the work of God and impair the plan of God, and thus man has become Satan, and become the enemy of God. For man to be saved, he must first be conquered. It is because of this that God rises to the challenge and comes into the flesh to do the work He intends to do, and to do battle with Satan. His aim is the salvation of man, who has been corrupted, and the defeat and annihilation of Satan, which rebels against Him. He defeats Satan through His work of conquering man, while at the same time He saves corrupt mankind. Thus, it is a work that achieves two aims at once" ("Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

God wants to transform mankind that has been corrupted by Satan to act against God into a mankind that truly obeys God and is compatible with God. The difficulty of this task is quite high. It is much more difficult than the creation of the heavens and earth and all things by God. The creation of the heavens and earth and all things from nothingness was accomplished by one word of God's. But to cleanse and transform the utterly corrupted mankind, God must become flesh and express many truths to judge and cleanse man. For us to experience God's judgment and chastisement, to cast away corruption and receive cleansing, it requires the process of a long period. This is also the process of God's battle with Satan. First by expressing the truth to conquer man and then cleansing and

making man perfect with the truth. When we understand the truth and know God, we will clearly see the fact of our corruption by Satan and begin to detest Satan, forsake Satan, and curse Satan. Ultimately, we will thoroughly rebel against Satan and completely turn to God. So that God wrests mankind back from Satan's hands. These people who are saved are God's spoils from defeating Satan. Only by working like this can God really defeat and humiliate Satan. This is also the inside story of God's work of judgment in the last days. According to Satan's original intention, human beings have been corrupted into living devils. If God can turn these living devils into human beings, Satan will be convinced. So God follows His original plan by becoming flesh to battle with Satan's kinds. Although God's work in the last days only lasts twenty to thirty years, He made a group of overcomers, fulfilling the prophecies in the Book of Revelation: "**These are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. These are they which follow the Lamb wherever he goes. These were redeemed from among men, being the first fruits to God and to the Lamb**" (Rev 14:4). These overcomers are the firstfruits gained and enjoyed by God. Compared to the history of mankind, isn't twenty or thirty years just a blink of an eye? The Bible says, "one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day" (2Pe 3:8). If it says that when the Lord returns in the last days, He will change our body in a moment, in a blink of an eye, it is also completely suitable to be applied on the effects achieved by God's work in the last days. It can also be received this way. But we can easily interpret Paul's words as those who believe in the Lord will be instantly transformed and lifted into the air to meet the Lord when He returns. So, we just

idly waited for the Lord to descend on the clouds to transform and rapture us. Isn't Paul's word misleading? We cannot be filled with notions and imagination about God's work. God's work is practical, tangible and visible at every step. The incarnate Almighty God is the practical God who comes to the world to save man by expressing the truth. If we don't accept, aren't we rebelling against God and resisting God? How can we receive the praises and blessings of God?

Excerpted from the movie script of The Moment of Change

Question 3: During church meetings, the pastor and elder frequently say that the Lord Jesus saying on the cross "**It is finished**" proves that the work of saving mankind was finished, that simply by believing in the Lord Jesus and confessing our sins before Him, we are forgiven of sin, and the Lord would no longer see us as sinners. We are justified by faith alone, saved by grace. The Lord will receive us into the kingdom of heaven when He returns, and will not possibly return to do further work of saving mankind. I feel that this understanding by the pastor and elder is not acceptable. Yet, ultimately what was the Lord Jesus referring to, when He said on the cross, "**It is finished**"? Why does God need to come back in the last days to express truth, and do the work of judging and purifying man?

Answer: When the Lord Jesus said on the cross "It is finished," really what was He referring to? Did He mean that the work of redemption was finished, or did He mean that God's work of fully saving mankind was finished? Could the people of the time really know? It can be said that no one knew. All the Lord Jesus said were the words: "It is finished." He did not say that God's work of saving mankind was finished. Humans cannot ever truly understand what the Lord Jesus referred to when He said, "It is finished." Why would anyone dare to explain the words of the Lord according to his own ideas? Why dare arbitrarily to interpret this phrase "**it is finished?**" This is none other than randomly putting one's own human ideas upon the words of the Lord Jesus. Consider this, everyone, if the Lord Jesus saying "**It is finished,**" indicates that God's work of saving all mankind is thoroughly complete, then why did the Lord prophesy, saying, "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of**

truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come" (Jhn 16:12–13). How do you understand this? Also, as recorded in the Gospel of John, Chapter 12, Verses 47–48, the Lord Jesus said: "**And if any man hear my words, and believe not, I judge him not: for I came not to judge the world, but to save the world. He that rejects me, and receives not my words, has one that judges him: the word that I have spoken, the same shall judge him in the last day.**" The words of the Lord Jesus tell us clearly that the Lord will return to express truth and to do judgment work. There is also the Bible prophecy: "**For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God**" (1Pe 4:17). According to what the pastor and elder say, if the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus completed all of the work of saving the human race, then how would the prophecy of the Lord Jesus, "**However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth,**" how would these words come true? Wouldn't the Lord Jesus' prophecy that He would return to express truth and do judgment work fall through? Therefore, what the pastor and elder say clearly does not tally with the Lord Jesus' words, and does not tally with the reality of God's work. We should all know that what the Lord Jesus did was the work of redeeming the human race. All we must do is accept the Lord Jesus, confess and repent before Him, and our sins will be pardoned. Then we are qualified to pray to the Lord, and can enjoy the grace that the Lord bestows. Regardless of the sin, we will no longer be condemned by law. This is the outcome of the Lord Jesus' work of redemption. This is the true meaning of the phrase "salvation by

faith" that we often say. From the outcome achieved by the work of the Lord Jesus we see even greater verification that the Lord Jesus' work was solely that of redemption. By no means was it the work of judging, purifying, and perfecting people of the last days. Though our belief in the Lord Jesus pardons our sins, and we no longer commit obvious sins, and behave quite well, yet we have not thoroughly separated ourselves from sin and become pure, and been fully saved, have we? Do we still frequently tell lies and commit sins? Do we still act greedily and have wicked thoughts? Do we still envy others, and hate others? Are our hearts full of arrogance and trickery? Do we still mimic worldly trends, cling to wealth, and covet glory? Some people, when caught or persecuted by the Chinese Communist government, even blame God. They even provide written statements in which they deny God, and betray God. Especially concerning the expression of truth and judgment work of Almighty God during the last days, people cast judgment upon and condemn God's work based on their own notions and fancies. Isn't this true? In our belief in the Lord, therefore, we gain only pardon of sins. But within us remains Satan's nature and Satan's disposition. This is the source of our sinning and resisting God. If our inner sinful nature is not resolved, then we will resist God, betray God, and consider God an enemy. Would you say that such a person is qualified to enter the kingdom of heaven? It should be clear by now that in saying "**It is finished**," the Lord Jesus meant only that God's work of redemption was complete. Most certainly, He was not saying that all of the work of saving the human race was complete. Almighty God incarnate of the last days came to express all truth, and to do the work of judgment starting from God's house. This coming is to thoroughly make people pure, and to fully

save them, to resolve the foundational problem of sin inside people, to allow people to be free from sin and attain purity, to achieve full salvation and enter God's kingdom. let us read a few more passages of Almighty God's words, so that all of us can understand more clearly.

Almighty God says: "**A sinner such as you, who has just been redeemed, and has not been changed, or been perfected by God, can you be after God's heart? For you, you who are still of your old self, it is true that you were saved by Jesus, and that you are not counted as a sinner because of the salvation of God, but this does not prove that you are not sinful, and are not impure. How can you be saintly if you have not been changed? Within, you are beset by impurity, selfish and mean, yet you still wish to descend with Jesus—you should be so lucky! You have missed a step in your belief in God: You have merely been redeemed, but you have not been changed. For you to be after God's heart, God must personally do the work of changing and cleansing you; if you are only redeemed, you will be incapable of attaining sanctity. In this way you will be unqualified to share in the good blessings of God, for you have missed out a step in God's work of managing man, which is the key step of changing and perfecting. You, a sinner who has just been redeemed, are therefore incapable of directly inheriting God's inheritance**" ("Concerning Appellations and Identity" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**You must know what kind of people I desire; those who are impure are not permitted to enter into the kingdom, those who are impure are not permitted to besmirch the holy ground. Though you may have done much work, and worked for many years, in the end if you are still deplorably filthy, then it will be intolerable to the law of Heaven that you wish to enter My kingdom! From the foundation of the world until today, never have I offered easy access to My kingdom to those who curry favor with Me. This is a heavenly rule, and no one can break it!**" ("Success or Failure Depends on the Path That Man Walks" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Though Jesus did much work among man, He only completed the redemption of all mankind and became man's sin offering; He did not rid man of all his corrupt disposition. Fully saving man from the influence of Satan not only required Jesus to become the sin offering and bear the sins of man, but it also required God to do even greater work to rid man completely of his satanically corrupted disposition. And so, now that man has been forgiven of his sins, God has returned to the flesh to lead man into the new age, and begun the work of chastisement and judgment. This work has brought man into a higher realm. All those who submit under His dominion shall enjoy higher truth and receive greater blessings. They shall truly live in the light, and they shall gain the truth, the way, and the life**" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Before man was redeemed, many of Satan's poisons had already been planted within him and, after thousands of years of being corrupted by Satan, he has within him an established nature that resists God. Therefore, when man has been redeemed, it is nothing more than a case of redemption in which man is bought at a high price, but the poisonous nature within him has not been eliminated. Man that is so defiled must undergo a change before becoming worthy to serve God. By means of this work of judgment and chastisement, man will fully come to know the filthy and corrupt essence within his own self, and he will be able to change completely and become clean. Only in this way can man become worthy to return before the throne of God. All the work done this day is so that man can be made clean and be changed; through judgment and chastisement by the word, as well as through refinement, man can purge away his corruption and be made pure. Rather than deeming this stage of work to be that of salvation, it would be more apt to say it is the work of purification**" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The work of the last days is to separate all according to their kind, and to conclude the management plan of God, for the time is near and the day of God has come. God brings all who enter His kingdom—all who are loyal to Him to the very end—into the age of God Himself. Yet prior to the arrival of the age of God Himself, God's work is not to observe the deeds of man, or to inquire into the life of man, but to judge man's disobedience, for God shall purify all**

those who come before His throne. All who have followed the footsteps of God to this day are those who come before the throne of God, and this being so, every single person who accepts God's work in its final phase is the object of God's purification. In other words, everyone who accepts God's work in its final phase is the object of God's judgment" ("Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The last days have already arrived. All things in creation will be separated according to their kind, and divided into different categories based on their nature. This is the moment when God reveals humanity's outcome and their destination. If people do not undergo chastisement and judgment, then there will be no way of exposing their disobedience and unrighteousness. Only through chastisement and judgment can the outcome of all creation be revealed. Man only shows his true colors when he is chastised and judged. Evil shall be put with evil, good with good, and all humanity shall be separated according to their kind. Through chastisement and judgment, the outcome of all creation will be revealed, so that the evil may be punished and the good rewarded, and all people become subject to the dominion of God. All this work must be achieved through righteous chastisement and judgment. Because man's corruption has reached its peak and his disobedience become exceedingly severe, only God's righteous disposition, one that is principally compounded of chastisement and judgment and is revealed during the**

last days, can fully transform and complete man. Only this disposition can expose evil and thus severely punish all the unrighteous" ("The Vision of God's Work (3)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The essential purpose of God's work of chastisement and judgment is to purify humanity and to prepare them for their ultimate rest; without such cleansing, none of humanity could be classified into different categories according to kind, or enter into rest. This work is humanity's only path to enter into rest. Only God's work of purification will cleanse humans of their unrighteousness, and only His work of chastisement and judgment will bring to light those disobedient elements of humanity, thereby separating those who can be saved from those who cannot, and those who will remain from those who will not. When this work ends, those people who are allowed to remain will all be cleansed and enter a higher state of humanity in which they will enjoy a more wonderful second human life upon the earth; in other words, they will commence their human day of rest, and coexist with God. After those who are not allowed to remain have been chastised and judged, their true colors will be entirely exposed, after which they will all be destroyed and, like Satan, will no longer be permitted to survive upon the earth. The humanity of the future will no longer include any of this type of people; such people are not fit to enter the land of the ultimate rest, nor are they fit to join in the day of rest that God and humanity will share, for they are the targets of punishment**

and are wicked, unrighteous people. ... The entire purpose behind God's ultimate work of punishing evil and rewarding good is to thoroughly purify all humans so that He may bring a purely holy humanity into eternal rest. This stage of His work is the most crucial; it is the final stage of the whole of His work of management" ("God and Man Will Enter Into Rest Together" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God speaks very clearly about the significance and outcome achieved of God's judgment work during the last days. This allows us to be certain that God's judgment work during the last days is the work that thoroughly purifies and saves the human race. The redemption work that the Lord Jesus did paves the way for God's judgment work of the last days. Almighty God does the work of judgment and purification upon the foundation of the Lord Jesus' redemption work, thoroughly saving the human race from sin and bringing them into God's kingdom. Isn't God working in this way very practical? If we accept only the redemption work of the Lord Jesus, and don't accept God's judgment and purification work of the last days, how could we be qualified to enter God's kingdom? It appears that belief in God requires us to understand the work of God. This is ever so important! Yet many religious people hold the belief of salvation through faith alone. They believe that belief in the Lord brings pardon of sins, solving all problems, believing the merciful and loving Lord pardons any sin a person could commit. He will lift them all into the kingdom of heaven when He comes. They therefore refuse to accept the last days' judgment work of Almighty God. What problem is this? Does this kind of person understand God's work? Do they understand God's righteous disposition? Would you say that

God could permit a satanic category of person who rebels against Him and resists Him to enter into His kingdom? Right! He would not! What result would the entry of this kind of person into God's kingdom bring about? Let us consider an example. If the Israelites who believed in Jehovah God were brought into the kingdom of God, what do you think would happen? They could not even accept God incarnate, the Lord Jesus, and they also did their utmost to condemn the Lord Jesus, and nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. This satanic category that insanely resists God in this way, if they were to enter into the kingdom of God, would they continue to resist God? Would they revolt? Would they attempt to usurp the Lord's power? Why did the Lord Jesus not go into the synagogue to preach? It is because the chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees of the Jewish faith were so evil. They were capable of anything. We all know that after the Lord Jesus was caught by them, He was beaten, taunted, and spat upon. He was even turned over to the Roman government to be crucified. The Lord Jesus already knew that they were the ilk of serpent so He did not go into the synagogue to preach. In the last days the Lord Jesus has returned. Why does He not go into the churches to preach? It is because the leaders in the churches are all so fiendish. Were the incarnate Almighty God to go into the churches, they would surely call the police. They would surely hand Almighty God over to the CCP government. Is this not the truth? Now do we dare to go into the churches to openly bear witness for Almighty God? If you bore witness for Almighty God to them, they would certainly besiege you and dishonor you, and even turn you over to Public Security Bureau. For these reasons, the church of today is the same as the synagogues of the Jewish religion were. They are all places that drive away God,

resist God, and condemn God. Is this the way it is? This goes to show the extent to which the human race is corrupt. They are fed up with truth, and abhor truth. They all reject the arrival of God, and they all have become Satan's kind and oppose God. If God had not been incarnated during the last days to express truth, to judge people, and purify people, the human race would have been destroyed by God because they resisted God.

Excerpted from the movie script of Stay Out of My Business

Question 4: We've read Almighty God's words and have seen that there are some things that are very harsh. They are judgment of mankind, and condemnation and curse. I think that if God judges and curses people, won't they be condemned and punished? How can it be said that this kind of judgment is to purify and save mankind?

Answer: In the last days, God expresses the truth and does the work of judgment in order to make a group of overcomers, a group of those who are of one heart and mind with God. This was determined when God created the world. But there are some people who see that some of the words of God contain condemnation and curse of people and they develop notions. This is mainly because they don't know the work of God. God's judgment in the last days is the great white throne of judgment prophesied in the Book of Revelation. God reveals His disposition of righteousness, majesty, and wrath, and it is entirely to expose mankind and distinguish each type of person. Even more, it's to end the old age and wipe out those who are of Satan. So for all of those of Satan who resist God, could God not condemn and curse them? Although there are some words of judgment and exposing the corruption revealed by God's chosen people and their true corrupt likenesses, and these seem to be condemnation, this is for the sake of allowing God's chosen people to clearly see the essence of their corrupt dispositions and see through to the heart of the issue, and to bear the fruit of understanding the truth. If God weren't so harsh, if His words didn't hit the nail on the head, we wouldn't be able to recognize our own corrupt likenesses and satanic natures, and it wouldn't be possible for God's work in the last days to achieve the outcome of purifying and perfecting mankind. All those who love the truth and respect facts will be able

to see that God's words are sharp, whether they are words of judgment and chastisement, or condemnation and curse, they are all entirely in line with the actual facts. God speaks in a way that is very practical and very genuine, and it is not at all overdone. From the outcomes achieved by these harsh words of God, we can all see that hidden within them is God's genuine love for mankind and His good intentions of saving mankind. Only those who are sick of the truth could conceive of notions, and only those who hate the truth could judge and condemn God's work. God has been working in China for more than 20 years and He has already made a group of overcomers. They have undergone brutal suppression and persecution by the CCP government, and they are all able to stand and bear witness. This entirely is the fruit achieved by God's words. They have all seen God's love within His words, and they have seen how He has suffered in order to save mankind. Even though some of His words are so harsh they are able to obey them, and from that they have a genuine knowledge of God's disposition. They have developed hearts of reverence and love for God. They are all able to fulfill their duties faithfully, and follow God all the way until the end. This is what most shames Satan, and this is the proof of God defeating Satan. let's look at some passages in Almighty God's words, and we will be clearer on this.

Almighty God says: "**God's work in the present incarnation is to express His disposition primarily through chastisement and judgment. Building on this foundation, He brings more truth to man and points out to him more ways of practice, thereby achieving His objective of conquering man and saving him from his own corrupt**

disposition. This is what lies behind the work of God in the Age of Kingdom" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**In the last days, Christ uses a variety of truths to teach man, to expose the substance of man, and to dissect the words and deeds of man. These words comprise various truths, such as man's duty, how man should obey God, how man should be loyal to God, how man ought to live out normal humanity, as well as the wisdom and the disposition of God, and so on. These words are all directed at the substance of man and his corrupt disposition. In particular, the words that expose how man spurns God are spoken in regard to how man is an embodiment of Satan, and an enemy force against God. In undertaking His work of judgment, God does not simply make clear the nature of man with a few words; He exposes, deals with, and prunes over the long term. These methods of exposure, dealing, and pruning cannot be substituted with ordinary words, but with the truth of which man is utterly bereft. Only methods such as these can be called judgment; only through judgment of this kind can man be subdued and thoroughly convinced into submission to God, and moreover gain true knowledge of God. What the work of judgment brings about is man's understanding of the true face of God and the truth about his own rebelliousness. The work of judgment allows man to gain much understanding of the will of God, of the purpose of God's work, and of the mysteries that are incomprehensible to him. It also allows man to recognize and know his corrupt essence and the**

roots of his corruption, as well as to discover the ugliness of man. These effects are all brought about by the work of judgment, for the essence of this work is actually the work of opening up the truth, the way, and the life of God to all those who have faith in Him. This work is the work of judgment done by God" ("Christ Does the Work of Judgment With the Truth" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**By what means is God's perfection of man accomplished? It is accomplished by means of His righteous disposition. God's disposition primarily consists of righteousness, wrath, majesty, judgment, and curse, and He perfects man primarily by means of His judgment. Some people do not understand, and ask why it is that God is only able to make man perfect through judgment and curse. They say, 'If God were to curse man, wouldn't man die? If God were to judge man, wouldn't man be condemned? Then how can he still be made perfect?' Such are the words of people who do not know the work of God. What God curses is the disobedience of man, and what He judges are the sins of man. Although He speaks harshly and relentlessly, He reveals all that is within man, revealing through these stern words that which is substantive within man, yet through such judgment, He gives man a profound knowledge of the substance of the flesh, and thus man submits before God. The flesh of man is of sin and of Satan, it is disobedient, and it is the object of God's chastisement. Thus, in order to allow man to know himself, the words of God's judgment must befall him and there must be**

employed every kind of refinement; only then can God's work be effective" ("Only by Experiencing Painful Trials Can You Know the Loveliness of God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**All of you live in a land of sin and licentiousness, and you are all licentious and sinful. Today you are not just able to look upon God, but more importantly, you have received chastisement and judgment, you have received truly profound salvation, which is to say, you have received God's greatest love. In all that He does, God is truly loving toward you. He has no ill intention. It is because of your sins that He judges you, so that you will examine yourselves and receive this tremendous salvation. All this is done for the purpose of making man complete. From beginning to end, God has been doing His utmost to save man, and has no desire to completely destroy the men He created with His own hands. Today, He has come among you to work, and is such salvation not even greater? If He hated you, would He still do work of such magnitude in order to personally guide you? Why should He suffer so? God does not hate you or have any ill intentions toward you. You should know that God's love is the truest love. It is only because people are disobedient that He has to save them through judgment; if not for this, saving them would be impossible. Because you do not know how to live and are not even aware of how to live, and because you live in this licentious and sinful land and are yourselves licentious and filthy devils, He cannot bear to let you become even more depraved, He cannot bear to see you living in this**

filthy land as you do now, trampled on by Satan at will, and He cannot bear to let you fall into Hades. He only wants to gain this group of people and thoroughly save you. This is the main purpose of doing the work of conquest on you—it is just for salvation" ("The Inside Truth of the Work of Conquest (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God's words are expressed so clearly, Mankind lives under the domain of Satan, lives in sin, and relishes that sin. None in the religious community have taken notice of God's arrival and none have a love for the truth or accept it. Regardless of how people have borne witness to God or spread His word, how many are there who have actively sought out or investigated God's appearance and work? And how many are there still who would be able to accept and submit to God's judgment and chastisement? Wouldn't everyone say that this mankind is the very height of wickedness? If not for God's judgment work of the last days, this mankind who is so thoroughly corrupted, full of satanic disposition, and who denies and resists God, would they be able to be cleansed and receive God's salvation? If not for God's judgment work of the last days, who would make a group of overcomers? How would the prophecies of the Lord Jesus be fulfilled? How would the kingdom of Christ be realized? Many people with faith in the Lord believe that God is a loving and merciful God and that no matter what sins we commit, God will absolve us. They believe that no matter how corrupt we are, no one will be cast aside and that the Lord will nevertheless rapture us into the kingdom of heaven when He returns. Is this a reasonable viewpoint? Is there anything in the Lord's word to back this up? God is a holy and righteous God; would He thus permit people who are tainted by filth

and corruption, filled with satanic disposition, deniers of truth, and enemies of God to enter into His kingdom? Therefore, the Lord Jesus prophesied that He will return, and in the last days express the truth, do His judgment work and thoroughly cleanse and save humanity. As for mankind who has been thoroughly tainted by corruption, God will surely issue forth the truth and implement His judgment and chastisement for them. This is the only way to awaken the hearts and spirits of man, to conquer man, and to cleanse from them their satanic disposition. Even though God's word of judgment against mankind for its filth, corruption, disobedience, and resistance against God is harsh, it nonetheless shows God's holy and righteous disposition, and it also allows us to understand our own satanic nature and the fact that we are corrupt. Through experiencing God's judgment and chastisement, we have all been conquered by God's word, we willingly submit to His judgment, gradually come to understand the truth, and clearly see our own satanic disposition and nature, we are able to achieve a true understanding of God's righteous disposition, we have developed a heart of reverence for God, we have unconsciously changed our way of looking at things, our life disposition has changed, and we are able to revere God and shun evil. Thanks be to God! God's work of judgment in the last days has finally accomplished the creation of a group of overcomers, which is the result of God's judgment work in the last days, and is the true significance behind God's work of judgment beginning with His house. What does this allow us to see? God judges and exposes man with His word not to punish and destroy man, but completely to cleanse, change, and save man. But for those people who refuse to accept the judgment and cleansing of the word of Almighty God,

when the great disaster befalls, they will descend into the disaster and be punished.

We've undergone a few years of God's judgment and chastisement and have understood some truths. We have truly seen that mankind's corruption by Satan really is so deep, that every person is full of satanic dispositions of arrogance, deceitfulness, being self-seeking, and selfish and despicable. And they frequently cannot help but lie and cheat. What they're living out is nearly devoid of human likeness. In front of God, we are all ashamed and remorseful, and we have nowhere to hide. This is one aspect of what we gain from undergoing the judgment and chastisement of God's words. The greatest thing we gain is that we have a bit of genuine understanding of God's righteous disposition and holy essence, so we are able to fear God and shun evil, and live out some likeness of a real man. We all deeply feel that we truly have gained purification from God, and that we have gained great salvation from Him. In the past, when I worked as a leader in the church, I was always focused on my own fame and status, and I did not take on the burden of the brothers' and sisters' lives. I always liked to have other people revolving around me, and I was greedy for the blessing of status. I was high and mighty and wasn't convinced by anyone. When someone had a different opinion on something encountered than I did, but would just stick to my guns and continue to speak my own mind so that the other person would obey. Since I didn't focus on pursuing the truth and did not possess the reality of the truth, when I preached I only talked about some literal understanding to show myself, to show off. That way I didn't know when my own actions offended God's disposition. Then there was one day that I read this

in Almighty God's words: "**Those who only ever believe in God for their own benefit, who are self-righteous and haughty, who show off, and who protect their own status are people who love Satan and oppose the truth. These people resist God and belong entirely to Satan**" ("Escape From the Influence of Darkness, and You Will Be Gained by God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**Your image is even greater than God's, your status even higher than God's, to say nothing of your prestige among men—you have become an idol that people worship. Have you not become the archangel? When people's outcomes are revealed, which is also when the work of salvation will draw near its end, many of those among you will be corpses beyond salvation and must be eliminated**" ("Practice (7)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Every bit of Almighty God's words contain authority and might, and they pierced my heart like a sword. I had nowhere to hide, I was afraid and trembling, and I felt that God was emitting His wrath toward me. I could not help but fall down in front of God and repent of my evil ways. I believed in God but did not pursue the truth, I did not hold God aloft and bear witness to Him, but in performing my duty I often established myself and showed off so that people would admire and look up to me. Wasn't I deceiving and shackling others? Wasn't I vying for status with God? I was too arrogant, and I knew no shame! My actions had offended God's disposition long before that, and someone like me who vies for status with God would certainly be a target for elimination by God, and should be cursed. I was in great pain and was put to the refinement. I prayed to God and sought the truth, and then I read more of Almighty God's words: "**Though**

people are refined and mercilessly exposed by God's chastisement and judgment—the aim being to punish them for their sins, to punish their flesh—none of this work is intended to condemn their flesh to destruction. The severe disclosures by the word are all for the purpose of leading you onto the right path. You have personally experienced so much of this work and, clearly, it has not led you onto an evil path! It is all in order to make you live out normal humanity, and it is all achievable by your normal humanity" ("The Inside Truth of the Work of Conquest (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). From Almighty God's words, I suddenly saw the light, and I understood God's good intentions in His judgment of me. God's judgment and chastisement was not to eliminate me, but it was to have me recognize my own arrogant satanic nature, to recognize the nature and consequences of my actions, and to recognize God's attitude in dealing with people like me. It was so that I would genuinely repent, hate myself, forsake myself, be able to pursue the truth, pursue a change in disposition, and live out normal humanity. His words eliminated my misunderstandings of God. I was no longer negative and weak, and I began to pursue the truth. When I turned back to God and saw that He had not abandoned me, nor was He dealing with me based on my transgressions, but He had enlightened and illuminated me, I understood the significance of God judging and chastising people. I genuinely felt His mercy and salvation. After undergoing that judgment and chastisement through God's words, I recognized the righteousness and holiness of God's disposition, that He hates mankind's sin and his satanic dispositions, which is the reason He

utters words of condemnation and curse toward mankind. This way I felt God's righteous disposition of not tolerating people's offenses even more, and I developed a heart of reverence for God. After undergoing that kind of judgment and chastisement many times, I had a genuine understanding of my own arrogant nature. I hated myself and was disgusted myself from within my heart. I became honest in fulfilling my duty, and I was no longer as brash, I no longer showed off like that. I was able to hold God up high and bear witness to Him, and fulfill my duty according to His requirements. Among my brothers and sisters, I was able to dissect myself with awareness, and lay my satanic ugliness bare. I no longer focused so much on other people's assessments of me, and even when a brother or sister said something bad about me, I could return in front of God, seek the truth, and know myself. That I could have these changes and a bit of a human likeness was entirely the outcome achieved by Almighty God's judgment and chastisement of me.

Excerpted from the movie script of What a Beautiful Voice

VII. Questions and Answers on the Truth of Incarnation

Question 1: You bear witness to the fact that the Lord Jesus has returned and has been incarnated to do His work. This I just don't understand. We all know that the Lord Jesus was the incarnation of God. Having completed His work, He was crucified and then resurrected, appearing before all His disciples and He ascended into heaven in His glorious spiritual body. Just as the Bible says: "You men of Galilee, why stand you gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as you have seen him go into heaven" (Act 1:11). So, biblical scripture confirms that when the Lord comes again, it will be His resurrected spiritual body appearing to us. In the last days, why is God incarnated in the fleshly form of the Son of man to do the work of judgment? What is the difference between the resurrected spiritual body of the Lord Jesus and His incarnation as the Son of man?

Answer: Most of the faithful believe that the returned Lord will appear to them in His spiritual body, that is, the spiritual body of the Lord Jesus in which He appeared to man for forty days after His resurrection. We believers are all clear on this matter. On the surface, the spiritual body of the Lord Jesus after He resurrected appears in the same image of His incarnate flesh, but the spiritual body is not constrained by the material world, space, and place. It can appear and disappear at will, leaving man shocked and amazed. Accounts of this are recorded in the Bible. Before the Lord Jesus was crucified, He had been speaking and working in normal humanity of the flesh. Whether He was expressing truth, interacting with men, or performing miracles, men felt He was normal in every way. What men saw was this flesh really and truly doing work and really and

truly suffering torment and paying the price. In the end, it was this flesh that was nailed to the cross as the sin offering for man, thereby completing God's work of redemption. This is widely acknowledged fact. Just think for a moment: If it were the Lord Jesus' spiritual body doing work, would He be able to associate with and hold normal conversations with men? Could He really and truly suffer torments and pay the price? Could He be nailed to the cross? He could do none of these things. If it were His spiritual body doing the work, could we humans interact with Him easily? Would we betray our corrupt dispositions? Would we form conceptions about Him? Would we dare rebel against and judge God at will? That would be impossible! Men are all imbued with normal humanity, they are all subject to the constraints of the material world, space, and place. Man's thinking process is also normal. If man were to come into contact with the work of the spiritual body, they would be frightened and seized with panic. Their thoughts would become crazed and maniacal. Faced with this kind of situation, God would be hard pressed to achieve success in His work of the salvation of mankind. So, the effect achieved by working within the confines of normal humanity far outpaces that within the spiritual body. Throughout the ages, God's chosen people have never experienced the work of God's spiritual body. It would certainly be unsuitable for the spiritual body to directly express truth, interact with people and shepherd the churches. The work of judgment that the second coming of God performs in the last days uses the expression of the word to purify, save, and perfect man, its goal is also to expose and eliminate men, parsing man out, each unto his own kind, and then rewarding the good while punishing the wicked. If God were to appear to man in

the form of His spiritual body, all men, good or evil, would prostrate themselves before Him, then how would He separate the good from the evil? Also, if God were to appear in His spiritual body, man would descend into a panic, and chaos would erupt throughout the world. If that were the case, how would God go about normally conducting His work of judgment in the last days? How, also, would God be able to fulfill His plan of making complete a group of men that accord with God's will before the calamities? So, in the last days, God still must take on a flesh as the Son of man with normal humanity. Only in this way can He work and live within human world, and only in this way can He express the truth and judge, purify man in a practical manner so that man may be wrested from the influences of Satan, be saved by God, and become God's people. The incarnate Lord Jesus worked within normal humanity to achieve the redemption of humanity. The Lord Jesus' resurrected spiritual body appeared to man just to prove that the Lord Jesus was the incarnation of God. This was done to strengthen man's faith. So, God's spiritual body only came to appear to man, not to do work. God's incarnate flesh has to have normal humanity to be able to do work amongst man and achieve the redemption and salvation of mankind. So, if God wants to thoroughly save mankind in His work of judgment in the last days, He must be incarnated and do His work in normal humanity to achieve the best effect. He certainly will not appear to man as the Lord Jesus' spiritual body to do the work of judgment in the last days. This is something that we, the faithful, all must become clear on.

To gain an even greater understanding of the meaning of the incarnation, let us read from Almighty God's word. Almighty God says: "**The reason why He becomes flesh is because the flesh**

can also possess authority, and He is capable of carrying out work in a practical manner among mankind, in such a way that it is visible and tangible to man. This work is much more realistic than the work done directly by the Spirit of God, who possesses all authority, and its results are also apparent. This is because God's incarnate flesh can speak and work in a practical way. The outward form of His flesh holds no authority, and can be approached by man, whereas His essence does carry authority, but His authority is visible to none. When He speaks and works, man is unable to detect the existence of His authority; this facilitates Him in doing work of a practical nature. … If God did not become flesh, He would remain the Spirit who is both invisible and intangible to man. Man being a creature of flesh, he and God belong to two different worlds and are possessed of different natures. The Spirit of God is incompatible with man, who is of flesh, and there is simply no way of establishing relations between them, not to mention that man is incapable of turning into a spirit. This being so, the Spirit of God must become a created being in order to do His original work. God can both ascend to the highest place and humble Himself to become a human creature, doing work among mankind and living in their midst, but man cannot ascend to the highest place and become a spirit, and even less can he descend to the lowest place. This is why God must become flesh to carry out His work" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The incarnate God is normal and practical. He is not as humans imagine in some matters, able to know them mysteriously without seeing or touching them, unlimited by space or geography. That is not the flesh but the spiritual body. After Jesus was nailed to the cross and resurrected, He could pass through the door, but that was the resurrected Jesus. Before the resurrection, Jesus could not have passed through a wall. He was constrained by space, geography, and time. That is the normality of the flesh**" ("How to Understand the Relationship Between God's Flesh and Spirit" in Records of Christ's Talks).

"**Because the one who is judged is man, man who is of the flesh and has been corrupted, and it is not the spirit of Satan that is judged directly, the work of judgment is therefore not carried out in the spiritual world, but among man. No one is more suitable, and qualified, than God in the flesh for the work of judging the corruption of man's flesh. If judgment were carried out directly by the Spirit of God, then it would not be all-embracing. Furthermore, such work would be difficult for man to accept, for the Spirit is unable to come face-to-face with man, and because of this, the effects would not be immediate, much less would man be able to behold the unoffendable disposition of God more clearly. Satan can only be fully defeated if God in the flesh judges the corruption of mankind. ... If this work were done by the Spirit of God, then it would not mean victory over Satan. The Spirit is inherently more exalted than mortal beings, and the Spirit of God is**

inherently holy, and triumphant over the flesh. If the Spirit did this work directly, He would not be able to judge all of man's disobedience and could not reveal all of man's unrighteousness. For the work of judgment is also carried out through man's notions about God, and man has never had any notions about the Spirit, and so the Spirit is incapable of better revealing the unrighteousness of man, much less of completely disclosing such unrighteousness. The incarnate God is the enemy of all those who do not know Him. Through judging man's notions and opposition to Him, He discloses all the disobedience of mankind. The effects of His work in the flesh are more apparent than those of the work of the Spirit. And so, the judgment of all mankind is not carried out directly by the Spirit but is the work of the incarnate God" ("Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Only through becoming flesh can God personally deliver His words into the ears of each and every human being, so that all who have ears may hear His words and receive His work of judgment by the word. Only this is the result achieved by His word, rather than the Spirit becoming manifest to frighten man into submission. It is only through this practical and yet extraordinary work that the old disposition of man, hidden deep within for many years, can be fully exposed, so that man may recognize it and have it changed. These things are all the practical work of God incarnate, in which, speaking and executing**

judgment in a practical manner, He achieves the results of judgment upon man by the word. This is the authority of God incarnate and the significance of God's incarnation" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God's word clearly explains the difference between God's work in the spiritual body and the work of God incarnate. It also completely reveals the meaning of God's work in His incarnation. Despite the fact that the Lord Jesus' spiritual body can appear to man and come face to face with them, the spiritual body still seems unfathomably mysterious and unapproachable to man, He stirs fear and apprehension in their hearts and causes them to keep a respectful distance. Because the Lord Jesus' spiritual body cannot interact normally with man and cannot perform work and speak normally amongst men, He therefore is incapable of saving mankind. However, God incarnate is different. He can interact with man in a practical and real way. He can water and supply man, just as the Lord Jesus, living in the company of men, was able to express the truth to supply man, anytime and anywhere. His disciples often sat with Him, listening to His teachings and having heart-to-heart discussions with Him. They directly received His watering and shepherding. Whatever problems or difficulties they faced, the Lord Jesus helped resolve them. They were endowed with an enormous share of life supply. They found God to be amiable and lovely. For this reason, they were able to truly love and obey God. Only once the incarnation of God comes into the realm of man do we have the opportunity to interact with, experience and know God. Only then are we able to see God's wondrousness and wisdom and practical

salvation of humankind with our own eyes. This is one aspect of the significance and practical value of the work of God incarnate. The spiritual body simply cannot achieve this effect.

This fellowship has made one fact very clear to us. Only by being incarnated as the Son of man and working within normal humanity can God practically judge, conquer and purify man. The Lord Jesus' spiritual body could not achieve nearly the same effect in His work. At first, when God becomes incarnate as the Son of man to do the work of judgment and purification amongst men, we humans will treat God like an ordinary human because we've yet to distinguish God's incarnation for who He really is. We will even form notions with regard to God's word and work, we'll treat Christ without respect and refuse to obey Him. We'll speak in falsities to fool Him, we'll judge and even oppose and condemn Him. The arrogance, rebelliousness, and resistance of us humans will be fully apparent before Christ. Just as Almighty God says: "**The corrupt disposition of man and his rebelliousness and resistance are exposed when he sees Christ, and the rebelliousness and resistance exposed at this time are more absolutely and completely exposed than at any other. It is because Christ is the Son of man—a Son of man who possesses normal humanity—that man neither honors nor respects Him. It is because God lives in the flesh that the rebelliousness of man is brought to light so thoroughly and in such vivid detail. So I say that the coming of Christ has unearthed all the rebelliousness of mankind and has thrown the nature of mankind into sharp relief. This is called 'luring a tiger down the mountain' and 'luring a wolf**

out of its cave'" ("Those Who Are Incompatible With Christ Are Surely Opponents of God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). God judges, exposes, prunes and deals with mankind according to the factual reality of their rebellion and resistance. God's work is truly practical and really reveals men for who they are. When faced with such factual evidence, those who are able to accept the truth will be thoroughly convinced and will admit their own rebellion and resistance. They will also become aware of the holy, righteous and unoffendable disposition of God and will be able to accept God's judgment and chastisement submissively, so that they may be conquered and saved by God's practical work. Just as Almighty God says: "**The incarnate God is the enemy of all those who do not know Him. Through judging man's notions and opposition to Him, He discloses all the disobedience of mankind. The effects of His work in the flesh are more apparent than those of the work of the Spirit. And so, the judgment of all mankind is not carried out directly by the Spirit but is the work of the incarnate God. God in the flesh can be seen and touched by man, and God in the flesh can completely conquer man. In his relationship with God in the flesh, man progresses from opposition to obedience, from persecution to acceptance, from notions to knowledge, and from rejection to love—these are the effects of the work of the incarnate God. Man is only saved through the acceptance of His judgment, man only gradually comes to know Him through the words of His mouth, man is conquered by Him during his opposition to Him, and he receives the life supply from Him during the**

acceptance of His chastisement. All of this work is the work of God in the flesh, and not the work of God in His identity as the Spirit" ("Corrupt Mankind Is More in Need of the Salvation of the Incarnate God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). So, man will only be thoroughly purified and saved if it is the incarnation of God that does the work of judgment in the last days.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

Question 2: Having listened to your fellowship and testimony these days, it is clear to me that the second coming of the Lord in the last days is the incarnation here to do the work of judgment. But we don't understand the truth of the incarnation and so are easily deceived by the rumors and falsities of the CCP government and the pastors and elders of the religious world. As a result, we will treat God incarnate as merely a man and even resist and blaspheme Him. Thus, I wish to ask you about the truth of the incarnation. What is the incarnation? What is the difference between the incarnate Christ and the prophets and apostles used by God?

Answer: As for the question of what is the incarnation and what is Christ, you could say, this is a mystery of the truth that no believers understand. Though believers for thousands of years have known that the Lord Jesus is the incarnate God, no one understands the incarnation and the actual substance of the incarnation. Only now that Almighty God of the last days has come, has this aspect of the mystery of the truth been revealed to man. Let's see how Almighty God puts it. Almighty God says: "**The 'incarnation' is God's appearance in the flesh; God works among created mankind in the image of the flesh. So for God to be incarnated, He must first be flesh, flesh with normal humanity; this is the most basic prerequisite. In fact, the implication of God's incarnation is that God lives and works in the flesh, that God in His very essence becomes flesh, becomes a man.**" "**The Christ with normal humanity is a flesh in which the Spirit is realized, and is possessed of normal humanity, normal sense, and human thought. 'Being realized' means God becoming man, the Spirit**

becoming flesh; to put it more plainly, it is when God Himself inhabits a flesh with normal humanity, and through it expresses His divine work—this is what it means to be realized, or incarnated" ("The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The incarnate God is called Christ, and Christ is the flesh donned by the Spirit of God. This flesh is unlike any man that is of the flesh. This difference is because Christ is not of flesh and blood; He is the incarnation of the Spirit. He has both a normal humanity and a complete divinity. His divinity is not possessed by any man. His normal humanity sustains all His normal activities in the flesh, while His divinity carries out the work of God Himself. Be it His humanity or divinity, both submit to the will of the heavenly Father. The essence of Christ is the Spirit, that is, the divinity. Therefore, His essence is that of God Himself; this essence will not interrupt His own work, and He could not possibly do anything that destroys His own work, nor would He ever utter any words that go against His own will**" ("The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

From Almighty God's words, it is clear The incarnation means God's Spirit is realized in the flesh. God's Spirit is clothed with a flesh and becomes an ordinary Son of man to bring His word and work on earth and appear to man. Which is to say that God in heaven has become man to speak, do His work, redeem and save man within the human world. He has both normal humanity and complete divinity. From His appearance alone, God's incarnation seems just like an

ordinary and normal human being. He has the same rules of life and participates in the same activities as any other normal human. He is possessed of emotions just like any other normal human: He lives practically and realistically within the company of men. From His outward appearance, He doesn't seem different than anyone else. But the true substance of the incarnate God is divinity. He can express God's disposition, all that God is and has. According to man's needs, He can express truth to supply life and save man at any time and place. He can do the work of God Himself, that which nothing else in all of creation is capable of. We all know that the Lord Jesus is the incarnation of God, is Christ. From His outward appearance, He seems just the same as us, just an ordinary and normal person. Yet, the Lord Jesus can express the truth and provide man with the way of repentance. He has the authority to pardon man of his sins and be crucified to complete the work of the redemption of mankind. No man is capable of this. The Lord Jesus can also perform signs and wonders. He can calm the winds and sea, feed five thousand men with just five loaves of bread and two fishes, and resurrect the dead, etc. The Lord Jesus also went far and wide to preach. According to man's real needs, He expressed the truth to supply life and shepherd man at any time and any place, allowing man to see how His words and work were those of the real and practical God. The Lord Jesus' words and work are a manifestation of God's life disposition and all that God has and is. No created humans are possessed with this or are capable of reaching such attainments. This is proof that the Lord Jesus is the incarnate God. Though He has normal humanity, His substance is divine. As such, He is capable of expressing the truth and God's voice. He can work as God to do God's work. So, if we were

only to see Christ's normal humanity, we would be apt to treat Him as an ordinary person; but if we were to realize that all that Christ says is the truth, that all He manifests is God's disposition and all that God is and has, and see the doings of God within the flesh, only by reaching this level would we come to know the divine substance of Christ.

It's crucial to us believers to know the divine substance of Christ! If we do not recognize the divine substance of Christ, we'll just take Christ for an ordinary person and will even treat the prophets and apostles which God uses as God Himself. This is no small issue! So now let us commune on the difference between Christ and the apostles and prophets used by God. Everyone knows that in outward appearance, God's incarnation has normal humanity and is an ordinary and normal person, but in actuality, He is God's Spirit realized in the flesh, He is divine in substance. That is why He is able to do the work of God Himself, expressing the truth, God's disposition, will and demands of mankind at any time and any place. He can judge, expose, and even curse man, just as He can redeem, purify, and save man. The prophets and apostles are men whom God uses. They only possess normal humanity, but lack God's divine substance. As such, they are only capable of doing the work of man. In God's management plan they can do nothing more than fulfill human duties. None of them can express the truth, much less do the work of God Himself. Though their communions are endowed with the Holy Spirit's enlightenment and illumination and are in keeping with the truth, they are not the truth itself, but just an expression of their understanding and experience of God's word. If we consider the apostles of the Age of Grace, what they communed was mainly an

expression of their understanding and experience of the Lord Jesus' words and work, they represented a testimony of experiencing God's work. When we look at the epistles of the apostles, we can see that they are clearly written by men, they are discourses on their experiences and testimony. Not a single word of these epistles contains the truth which God expresses. Not a single word of these epistles contains the authority and power of the Lord Jesus' word. Actually, when the prophets express God's word, they are only doing so because they have been ordered by God to convey His word. The prophets cannot express God's word using God's identity, they cannot speak in the first person. They also are unable to express the truth at will. This is because they are merely men whom God uses, they are not God themselves. They are just delivering God's word and that which they are able to deliver is very limited. So, when the prophets deliver God's word, they state clearly that they are speaking the word of God, it is not their own word. As we can see, the words of the apostles and those of the Lord Jesus are vastly different. We can not view them in the same light. All this proves that the prophets and the apostles are merely men whom God uses, they are not incarnations of God. God's incarnation can be called God because He has divine substance. The prophets and apostles have only humanity. They lack divine substance and, as such, can only be considered human. This is the difference in substance between God's incarnation and the prophets and apostles.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

Question 3: The Lord Jesus in whom we believe is God's incarnation. The Lord Jesus did God's work of redemption, no one dares deny this, but this Almighty God in whom you believe is not necessarily God's incarnation, because there is no record of Almighty God in the Bible. So then, the pastors and elders of the religious world all say He in whom you believe is merely a man, that you've been fooled. Only the Lord Jesus, in whom we believe, is Christ, is God's Son!

Answer: Your belief in the Lord Jesus as God's incarnation is not false. But why do you believe in the Lord Jesus? Do you really think of the Lord Jesus as God? You believe in the Lord Jesus because of what has been recorded in the Bible and because of the work of the Holy Spirit. But no matter what you say, if you haven't seen the Lord Jesus face to face, do you really dare say you know the Lord Jesus? In your belief in the Lord, you're merely echoing the words of Peter, who said that the Lord Jesus is Christ, the Son of the living God, but do you believe that the Lord Jesus is the manifestation of God, is God Himself? Do you dare say that you recognize the Lord Jesus' divine substance? Do you dare guarantee that if the Lord Jesus were to come again expressing the truth, you would recognize His voice? Your belief in the Lord Jesus amounts to nothing more than a belief in "the Lord Jesus" these three words. You believe in His name only. You don't understand the Lord Jesus' divine substance. If you do understand, then why can't you distinguish the voice of God's Spirit? Why don't you acknowledge that the truth which Almighty God expresses emerges from God and is the voice and word of the Holy Spirit? From what I've seen today, how you reject the voice of God and deny the truth which God

expresses, I am sure that you do not know the incarnate God! If you had been born two thousand years ago, in the age when the Lord Jesus was preaching and doing His work, you certainly would have joined the Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees in condemning the Lord Jesus. Is this not the case? The Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees had believed in the one and only God for many years, but why was it that they didn't recognize the Lord Jesus? Why did they nail Him to the cross? What was the issue? Why is it that the pastors and elders of the religious world in the last days fail to hear the voice of the Holy Spirit? Why do they still condemn the judgment work of Almighty God in the last days? Let me ask you all: Isn't someone who believes in God but fails to acknowledge God's incarnation an antichrist? The Jewish leaders resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus, the incarnate God. They were all antichrists revealed by God's work. As for the pastors and elders of the religious world in the last days who resist and condemn the incarnate Almighty God, are they not also antichrists exposed by God's work? We can all plainly see that the majority of pastors and elders in the religious world all resist and condemn the work of Almighty God in the last days; they look upon Almighty God's work without really seeing, they hear His words without really listening. Almighty God has expressed all the truths to purify and save mankind. He has conquered, saved, and made a group of overcomers. The gospel of the kingdom is spreading throughout the world, this is inexorable! Could the pastors and leaders of the religious world possibly not see the facts of God's work? How can they still say something as ridiculous as, "Belief in Almighty God is belief in a human"? Reflecting upon this, I'm instantly reminded of

how the Lord Jesus, when He came to do His work, was resisted, condemned, and blasphemed by the Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees. Did they not also say that belief in the Lord Jesus was belief in a mere human? What is the issue here? This just goes to show that there are many who believe in the vague God of the high heavens, but there are few who have knowledge of the incarnate God. Why did the Lord Jesus condemn those Pharisees that resisted Him? Because they only believed in the vague God of the high heavens, but condemned and resisted the incarnate God.

The chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees clearly saw the authority and power of the Lord Jesus' words and work. So how could they still brazenly resist, condemn, and blaspheme the Lord Jesus? They said that He cast out devils through Beelzebub, chief of the devils, and aimed to deceive man, and even nailed Him to the cross alive, what does this show? Was it not because they saw the Lord Jesus as an ordinary human that they did all this? Just as they said, "Is that not the Nazarene, the son of a carpenter?" In the conception of the Pharisees, the flesh of God incarnate should possess supernatural qualities. He should be of great stature and powerful build, with a heroic bearing and commanding presence. His words should have an earthshaking and deafening ring, they should strike fear in the hearts of man, so that no one dare approach Him. Otherwise, He could not be considered God. In truth, they didn't have the slightest understanding of what is meant by the incarnation and did not seek in the Lord Jesus' word and work for the truth, to find God's disposition and all that God is and has. They took the Lord Jesus for an ordinary man, judging and blaspheming Him based upon their illusions and conceptions. This proves that while they

believed in God, they did not know Him and even resisted Him. Now, the pastors and elders of the religious world say that the One we believe in is merely human. This is no different from how the Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees condemned the Lord Jesus' followers. As you can see, most pastors and elders of the religious world are no different than the hypocritical Pharisees of yore, they all believe in God while resisting Him at the same time. They are scoundrels who only acknowledge the vague God of the high heavens while denying Christ Himself! What right do they have to condemn those that accept and obey Christ?

In the last days, God has come again into a flesh to express His word and do His work among men. He has come this time as the incarnate Almighty God. From His outward appearance, Almighty God seems just like an ordinary person, living practically in the company of men, living among them, and taking part in their lives. He expresses the truth according to man's needs and does the work of judgment starting from God's house. In experiencing Almighty God's work, we have heard Almighty God's word with our own ears. We have seen Him unveil the mysteries of God's management plan with our own eyes, that is, the inside story of God's three stages of work for saving mankind, the purpose of God's management plan, the mystery of the incarnation, how Satan corrupts mankind, the substance and truth of man's corruption by Satan, how God purifies, saves, and perfects man, the meaning and purpose of God's work of judgment, who God loves and who He curses, who will be saved and who will be destroyed, the destination of man, the ends of all the many kinds of men, and how God's kingdom will be realized on earth, etc. While expressing these truths, Almighty God also judges

and exposes man's satanic disposition and his nature and substance of resistance to God, allowing us to see the substance and fact of our thorough corruption by Satan, to see how arrogant and self-aggrandizing, treacherous and selfish we are, how we have nothing of the likeness of humans, how unworthy we are to live before God. And yet God has been incarnated, humbly hiding and living among filthy and corrupt man, expressing the truth to judge, expose, and save man. We have deeply felt the substance of God's life is so kind and honorable. God's love for mankind is so real! In experiencing God's judgment by the word, we became intimately acquainted with God's righteous, holy, and unoffendable disposition, and felt the authority and power of Almighty God's word. Unknowingly, reverence grew in our hearts for God, we began to seek the truth, and our life disposition began to change. It was at this time that we truly realized that the incarnate Almighty God has expressed all the truth to purify and save us, allowing us to rid ourselves of arrogance, treachery, and our satanic disposition, and live out the likeness of an honest person. Almighty God lives among us, walking in the churches. Outwardly, He is just an ordinary person, yet He expresses the truth and manifests God's righteous disposition, and all that God is and has. Those that follow Him and experience His work have received the truth, the way, and the life. They see how the way God works is very practical and wise. They see how humble and hidden God is, how lovely He is, God has no arrogance, God's disposition is not corrupt. It would accord to reason that God, the Most High, would clothe Himself in a body of great height and powerful build, the kind of body that man would be compelled to worship. But this is not what God did. To save corrupt man, God clothed Himself in an ordinary

flesh, He took on the visage of an unexceptional man and came to live with us corrupt humans. He expresses words, judges and supplies us according to our needs. God is incarnated as a meager man and has already endured great indignities and suffering. Besides, He has suffered the slander, condemnation, and rejection of corrupt humanity, as well as the pursuit and persecution of the CCP government, and even so, God persists with unfathomable strength of will to express the truth and carry out the work of saving mankind. God has suffered incredible torment to save mankind! God's love of mankind is so very real! From this, we see how holy and great God is. There are no words to describe Him! Almighty God brings us closer to God, bringing us face to face with God, so that we could see Him, know Him, and have true love for Him, and in so doing, allowing us to receive God's perfection, so that we could truly worship and obey God. We all have acknowledged in our hearts that Almighty God in whom we believe is the Lord Jesus who has returned to flesh. Right! He is man, but is also God. Almighty God is the one and only God, the Creator of the heavens, earth, and all things! the pastors and elders of the religious world condemn us, thinking that we put belief in a mere human. Now let me ask: Who among all of humankind is capable of expressing the truth and God's voice? Who among men can so practically carry out the work of purifying and saving mankind? Who among men can allow corrupt man to be perfected into true knowers and obeyers of God by experiencing His work? There's no one, not a one! Only Almighty God is capable of doing such practical work. Almighty God is the manifestation of the Savior of the world. He is the practical God incarnate. Only Almighty God can save mankind and provide mankind with a lovely destination!

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

Question 4: You testify that, in outward appearance, God's incarnation looks just like an ordinary person, just like the Lord Jesus Himself, He not only possesses normal humanity, but also has divinity. This much is certain. What is the difference between the normal humanity of God's incarnation and that of corrupt man?

Answer: This is a very key issue. An issue that is of chief importance in our understanding of God's incarnation! When God is incarnated in the flesh to become Christ, man could plainly see the normal humanity in Christ. Christ expresses the truth and does His work in His normal humanity. Even when He performs signs and wonders, He does so in normal humanity, there is nothing supernatural about Him. This allows us to see the very normal nature of Christ's humanity, because of this, it is difficult for many to believe that Christ is God incarnate. Thus, during the Age of Grace, those who followed the Lord Jesus called Him Christ, the Son of God, but almost no one obeyed and worshiped the Lord Jesus as God Himself. Why was this? I believe this was mainly because Christ's humanity is very normal, there is absolutely nothing supernatural. In the eyes of men, Christ is just an ordinary person. So no matter how the Holy Spirit testified, man still had difficulty thinking of the Lord Jesus as God. The other issue was that the men of that age experienced far too little of the Lord Jesus' word, so it was very difficult for them to understand the truth and know the divine substance of Christ. Christ has normal humanity, but very few has a thorough understanding of Christ's normal humanity. Christ is without sin, His normal humanity is holy. He is without impurities and corruption, arrogance, rebellious disposition, and certainly lacks baseness and selfishness. This is vastly different from man's humanity, the two are

simply incomparable. Let's read two passages of Almighty God's word to get a clearer picture.

Almighty God says: "**The flesh worn by the Spirit of God is God's own flesh. The Spirit of God is supreme; He is almighty, holy, and righteous. Likewise, His flesh is also supreme, almighty, holy, and righteous. Such a flesh can only do that which is righteous and beneficial to mankind, that which is holy, glorious, and mighty; He is incapable of doing anything that violates the truth, that violates morality and justice, and much less is He capable of anything that would betray God's Spirit. The Spirit of God is holy, and thus His flesh is incorruptible by Satan; His flesh is of a different essence than the flesh of man. For it is man, not God, who is corrupted by Satan; Satan could not possibly corrupt the flesh of God. Thus, despite the fact that man and Christ dwell within the same space, it is only man who is possessed, used, and entrapped by Satan. By contrast, Christ is eternally impervious to Satan's corruption, because Satan will never be capable of ascending to the highest place, and will never be able to draw near to God**" ("A Very Serious Problem: Betrayal (2)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The humanity of Christ is governed by His divinity. Though He is in the flesh, His humanity is not entirely like that of a man of the flesh. He has His own unique character, and this too is governed by His divinity. ... The humanity of Christ is directed entirely by His divinity. Aside from the normal life of His humanity, all other**

actions of His humanity are influenced, affected, and directed by His divinity. Though Christ has a humanity, it does not disrupt the work of His divinity, and this is precisely because the humanity of Christ is directed by His divinity; though His humanity is not mature in how it conducts itself with others, it does not affect the normal work of His divinity. When I say that His humanity has not been corrupted, I mean that the humanity of Christ can be directly commanded by His divinity, and that He is possessed of a higher sense than that of the ordinary man. His humanity is most suited to being directed by the divinity in His work; His humanity is most able to express the work of the divinity, and most able to submit to such work. As God works in the flesh, He never loses sight of the duty that a man in the flesh ought to fulfill; He is able to worship God in heaven with a true heart. He has the essence of God, and His identity is that of God Himself. It is only that He has come to earth and become a created being, with the exterior shell of a created being and, now possessed of a humanity that He did not have before. He is able to worship God in heaven; this is the being of God Himself and is inimitable to man" ("The Essence of Christ Is Obedience to the Will of the Heavenly Father" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

From Almighty God's word, we see that because God's incarnation has divine substance and the Holy Spirit is realized and dwells within Him, Satan is incapable of corrupting Him. This is because Christ is the truth, is the way, and is the life. He is

impervious to Satan's corruption. Just as with us, if one day we acquire the entirety of the truth, then Satan will also be incapable of deceiving and corrupting us. Then we will truly be of God. We now can clearly see our own corrupt humanity is worlds away from Christ's normal humanity! Within Christ's normal humanity, there is the conscience and rationality of normal man, there is true love in His heart for God, and there is true obedience toward God. When Christ works and speaks in His normal humanity, no matter how the evil forces of Satan slander, condemn or blaspheme Him, no matter what difficulties He faces in His work, He always obeys God completely, and to carry out God's will, He is willing to pay any price. Just like when the Lord Jesus went into the wilderness for forty days to be tempted by Satan, He overcame the temptation of worldly riches and power and thoroughly defeated Satan. And especially when the Lord Jesus was about to be nailed to the cross, despite the weakness innate to His humanity, despite the excruciating torment in His heart, the Lord Jesus placed carrying out God's will above all else, preferring to sacrifice His own life and have nails driven through His live body rather than abandon God's will. No corrupt human could accomplish this feat. Not an ounce of the Lord Jesus is arrogant and self-important. Though He is God Himself, living in the company of men, yet the Lord Jesus never puts Himself in the position of God. He humbly hid Himself among men, speaking and working, serving and supplying man; He healed man's illness and drove out the devils within them, He relieved their worries and resolved their difficulties, even sitting amongst sinners, etc. From the incarnate Lord Jesus we see how Christ's humanity is holy and good. Christ manifests all aspects of normal humanity. Christ truly obeys

and loves God, and loves others as He loves Himself. Thus, Christ is able to undertake God's commission, do God's work, and carry out God's will.

Through this fellowship, we've seen how Christ's humanity is what really counts as normal humanity. Christ is capable of fulfilling God's commission, doing His work, and carrying out His will. If our humanity could be as holy as Christ's, would we not then be able to carry out the will of the heavenly Father? Unfortunately, we have all been deeply corrupted by Satan. Our humanity is full of satanic disposition, our words and actions are manipulated by our satanic nature, arrogant, treacherous, greedy, selfish, repulsed by the truth, worshipful of evil... We live like demons, there is nothing normal about such humanity! Though we believe in the Lord, we don't truly obey Him. When God's work is not in keeping with our conceptions and illusions, we rebel against, resist, and even betray God. Even those who make significant expenditures for the Lord, who work tirelessly in His service, they do so only to be rewarded and enter into the kingdom of heaven. They do it for their own benefit, not out of consideration of God's will, or to carry out God's will. Is this not the true state of the corrupt humankind? As is clear, the true substance of corrupt man is satanic, it is resistant to and traitorous of God, what man manifests is all satanic disposition, there is not a bit of humanity to be found. But the incarnate Christ is different. Because Christ has divine substance and has not been corrupted by Satan, He is without sin. Within Christ there is no rebellion or resistance, no arrogance, selfishness or treachery. Christ is able to obey God and carry out God's will absolutely. Only Christ's humanity is normal humanity. This is the substantive difference between the

normal humanity of God incarnate and the humanity of corrupt man. There are many who do not know Christ's normal humanity and even form conceptions and judgments against Christ. What is the issue here? Corrupt man is far too arrogant and obsessed with evil! They worship Satan in their hearts, and follow Satan without even knowing it; they resist and condemn Christ with passion, what unspeakable evil! They are downright degenerate! God has appeared in the flesh, and does His work within normal humanity, yet humans, in their blindness, fail to see, they just can't recognize Him. How do they expect to gain God's commendation? How do they expect to be raptured into the kingdom of heaven?

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

Question 5: In the Age of Grace God was incarnated to become the sin offering and take on the burden of man's sin. This all accords to reason. In the Age of Grace God was incarnated to become the sin offering and take on the burden of man's sin. This all accords to reason. The Lord Jesus was conceived by the Holy Spirit and became the Son of man to redeem mankind in His sinless body. Only in so doing was Satan humiliated. In the last days, God has been incarnated as the Son of man again to do the work of judgment. We have seen this to be fact. What I want to ask is this. God's two incarnations are slightly different, the first was in Judea, and the second is in China. Now, why is it that God has to be incarnated twice to do the work of saving mankind? What is the true significance of God's two incarnations?

Answer: Why is it that God must be incarnated twice to do the work of saving mankind? We should first be clear: With regard to the salvation of mankind, God's two incarnations have a deep and profound meaning. Because the work of salvation, no matter if we're talking about the redemption or the judgment and purification of the last days, can not be performed by man. It requires God to be incarnated and perform the work Himself. In the Age of Grace, God was incarnated as the Lord Jesus, that is, God's Spirit clothed Himself in a holy and sinless flesh, and was nailed to the cross to serve as a sin offering, redeeming man from his sinfulness. We all understand this. But as for the return of the Lord Jesus in the last days, why is He incarnated in the flesh as the Son of man to appear and work? Many have a hard time understanding this. If Almighty God had not explained this aspect of the truth and unveiled this

mystery, no one would have understood this truth. Let's see what exactly Almighty God has said.

Almighty God says: "**The first incarnation was to redeem man from sin, to redeem him by means of the fleshly body of Jesus, that is, He saved man from the cross, but the corrupt satanic disposition still remained within man. The second incarnation is no longer to serve as a sin offering but rather to save fully those who were redeemed from sin. This is done so that those who have been forgiven may be delivered from their sins and made fully clean, and by attaining a changed disposition, break free of Satan's influence of darkness and return before the throne of God. Only in this way can man be fully sanctified. After the Age of Law had come to an end, and beginning with the Age of Grace, God began the work of salvation, which continues until the last days when, in judging and chastising the human race for their rebelliousness, He will completely purify mankind. Only then will God conclude His work of salvation and enter into rest. Therefore, in the three stages of work, only twice has God become flesh to carry out His work among man Himself. That is because only one in the three stages of work is to guide men in leading their lives, while the other two consist of the work of salvation. Only by becoming flesh can God live alongside man, experience the suffering of the world, and live in a normal body of flesh. Only in this way can He supply men with the practical way that they need as created beings. It is through the incarnation of God that man receives full salvation from**

God, and not directly from heaven in answer to his prayers. For, man being of the flesh, he has no way of seeing the Spirit of God, much less of approaching His Spirit. All that man can come into contact with is God's incarnate flesh, and only by means of this is man able to grasp all the ways and all the truths and receive full salvation." "At the time that Jesus was doing His work, man's knowledge of Him was still vague and unclear. Man always believed Him to be the son of David, and proclaimed Him to be a great prophet, the benevolent Lord who redeemed man's sins. Some, on the strength of their faith, were healed just from touching the edge of His garment; the blind could see and even the dead could be restored to life. However, man was unable to discover the corrupt satanic disposition deeply rooted within himself, neither did he know how to cast it away. ... Therefore, after that stage of work was finished, there still remained the work of judgment and chastisement. This stage is to make man pure by means of the word, and thereby give him a path to follow. This stage would not be fruitful or meaningful if it continued with the casting out of demons, for it would fail to extirpate man's sinful nature, and man would come to a standstill at the forgiveness of his sins. Through the sin offering, man has been forgiven his sins, for the work of the crucifixion has already come to an end and God has prevailed over Satan. But the corrupt disposition of man still remaining within him, man can still sin and resist God, and God has not gained mankind. That is why in this stage of work God uses

the word to expose the corrupt disposition of man, causing him to practice in accordance with the right path. This stage is more meaningful than the previous one, as well as more fruitful, for now it is the word that directly supplies man's life and enables the disposition of man to be completely renewed; it is a much more thorough stage of work. Therefore, the incarnation in the last days has completed the significance of God's incarnation and completely finished God's management plan for man's salvation" ("The Mystery of the Incarnation (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

From Almighty God's words we see that in the Age of Grace God was incarnated the first time merely to do the work of redemption, using the crucifixion as a sin offering to redeem man from his sinfulness, to relieve man from the curses and condemnation of the law. We had only to confess our sins and repent and our sins would be forgiven. We could then enjoy the bountiful grace and truth. This is the work of redemption which the Lord Jesus did, and is the true meaning of being saved by faith in the Lord. We are saved through our faith in the Lord and is pardoned of our sins, but are we truly rid of our sinfulness? Though the Lord Jesus pardoned us of our sins, we have yet to wrest ourselves from the fetters of sinfulness, for we are still possessed of our sinful nature and satanic disposition. Though we have admitted our sins to the Lord and have gained His pardon, we have no knowledge of our sinful nature, and have even less knowledge of our corrupt disposition, a condition much more serious than sinfulness. We are only capable of recognizing that sin within ourselves which consists of lawlessness, and that which results in the

accusation of our conscience. But we fail to recognize the deeper sins, the sin of resistance to God. For instance, we have no knowledge of the root of our resistance to God, or how our satanic disposition is made manifest, how our satanic nature came to be, what Satan's poisons exist within our nature, where man's satanic philosophy and satanic logic and rules arise from. So why is it that man has no knowledge of these satanic things? Given that man has been pardoned of his sins by the Lord Jesus, why can't he wrest himself from the fetters of sinfulness, and why does he even continue to commit the same sins? Is man truly pure once he has been pardoned of his sins? Is he truly then holy? This is a truly practical issue that no one in the Age of Grace seems to understand. Though in our belief in the Lord, we are pardoned of our sins, we still unknowingly commit sins, resisting and betraying God. We believers have first-hand knowledge of this. For instance, even after putting faith in the Lord, we continue to lie, to be vain, to despise the truth and uphold evil. We are still arrogant, treacherous, selfish and greedy; we are helplessly caught up in the corrupt disposition of Satan. Many men work tirelessly for the Lord, but they do so in the hopes of being rewarded and entering into the kingdom of heaven. When they enjoy the Lord's grace they are happy and resolute in their faith in the Lord; but as soon as they are faced with disaster, or there is some tragedy in the family, they misunderstand, blame and even deny and betray the Lord. As soon as God's work is not in line with their conceptions and illusions, they act like hypocritical Pharisees, resisting and condemning God. This goes to show that though we accepted the Lord Jesus' salvation and were forgiven our sins, this does not mean that we have thoroughly rid ourselves of sin and are

now holy, even less does it mean that we have become of God and have been gained by God. So, when the Lord Jesus comes again to do the work of judgment in the last days, many from the religious world come to judge, condemn and blaspheme God, publicly announcing Him as their adversary and nailing Him once again to the cross. Could those that publicly condemn and resist God be raptured into the kingdom of heaven just on the basis of their sins being pardoned? Could God allow these evil forces that resist God within the kingdom of heaven? Would God rapture these antichrists, these haters of truth, into the kingdom of heaven? No! Because God is holy and righteous! As you can see, though we are pardoned of our sins through our faith in the Lord, we have not fully rid ourselves of sinfulness, rid ourselves of the satanic influences, and have even less so been gained by God and become of God. So, if we humans wish to rid ourselves of sin and become holy, to be fully gained by God, we must be thoroughly purified and saved by the work of God's second incarnation.

We have far too simple a view of God's work of salvation, as if as soon as man's sins were pardoned there were no other issues, and all that was left was just to wait to be raptured by the Lord into the kingdom of heaven. How naive and childish corrupt man is! How ridiculous corrupt mankind's conceptions and illusions! Was sin the only problem to afflict mankind after being corrupted by Satan? What is the root of man's sin? What is sin? Why does God detest it? To this day, no one has a proper understanding. Man has been corrupted thoroughly by Satan, to what degree is their corruption? No one is clear. The reality of man's thorough corruption was made evident during the crucifixion of the Lord Jesus. The fact that

humans could crucify the merciful Lord Jesus, who had expressed so much truth, truly showed that man had become a descendant of Satan, a brood of Satan, and had entirely lost their humanity, they did not even possess the slightest modicum of rationality or conscience. Who among man still possesses normal humanity? Doesn't man's resistance and animosity toward God indicate that man has come to the point where it's either them or Him, where they become irreconcilable with God? Can this problem really be solved by having their sins be pardoned? Who can guarantee that by having their sins pardoned, man won't resist God or take Him as their enemy? No one can guarantee it! Man's sins may be pardoned, but can God pardon man's nature? A nature which is resistant to God? Can God pardon man's satanic disposition that fills him? Then, how does God resolve these things belonging to Satan? Without a doubt, God uses judgment and chastisement. It's fair to say, without God's righteous judgment and chastisement, corrupt man would not be conquered, much less would they sink to the ground in deep humiliation. This is the main reason why God must be incarnated to do the work of judgment. There are many who question and have conceptions regarding God being incarnated to do the work of judgment in the last days. Why is this so? This is because they fail to see the reality of man's absolute corruption. So, as a result, they don't have the slightest understanding of the meaning of God's work of judgment in the last days. They hold fast to their notions, and fail to seek and investigate the true way. In this way, how could they possibly accept and obey God's work?

We humans cannot comprehend the profound depth of significance of God's two incarnations. So, as for why God has been

incarnated twice, and what the meaning of the two incarnations is, for this aspect of the truth, let us turn to two passages from Almighty God. Almighty God says: "**The significance of incarnation is that an ordinary, normal man performs the work of God Himself; that is, that God performs His divine work in humanity and thereby vanquishes Satan. Incarnation means that God's Spirit becomes a flesh, that is, God becomes flesh; the work that the flesh does is the work of the Spirit, which is realized in the flesh, expressed by the flesh. No one except God's flesh can fulfill the ministry of the incarnate God; that is, only God's incarnate flesh, this normal humanity—and no one else—can express the divine work. ... That He possesses normal humanity proves that He is God incarnated in the flesh; the fact that He undergoes a normal human growth process further demonstrates that He is a normal flesh; moreover, His work is sufficient proof that He is God's Word, God's Spirit, become flesh. God becomes flesh because of the needs of His work; in other words, this stage of work must be done in the flesh, it must be performed in normal humanity. This is the prerequisite for 'the Word become flesh,' for 'the Word's appearance in the flesh,' and it is the true story behind God's two incarnations.**" "**Why do I say that the meaning of incarnation was not completed in Jesus' work? Because the Word did not entirely become flesh. What Jesus did was only one part of God's work in the flesh; He only did the work of redemption, and did not do the work of completely gaining man. For this reason, God has**

become flesh once again in the last days. This stage of the work is also done in an ordinary flesh; it is performed by an utterly normal human being, one whose humanity is not in the least bit transcendent. In other words, God has become a complete human being; He is a person whose identity is that of God, a complete human being, a complete flesh, who is performing the work" ("The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God's word has revealed the significance and mystery of the incarnation. From reading Almighty God's word we know that incarnation refers to God's Spirit becoming clothed in flesh and turning into an ordinary and normal person to do the work of God Himself. The incarnate God must have normal humanity, must work and speak within normal humanity. Even when He performs miracles, they must be performed within normal humanity. In outward appearance, God incarnate appears normal. He seems to do His work like a normal, average human. If He didn't have normal humanity and work in His normal humanity, He would not be the incarnation of God. The incarnation means God's Spirit is realized in the flesh. Within normal humanity, He expresses the truth and does the work of God Himself, redeeming and saving mankind. This is the significance of the incarnation. Now what is the significance of God's two incarnations? What is meant primarily is that God's two incarnations have completed the significance of incarnation, accomplished the work of the Word appearing in the flesh and completed God's management plan to save mankind. This is the significance of God's two incarnations. We should all be clear the purpose of God's first incarnation was to do the work of redemption

and to pave the way for the work of judgment in the last days. So, God's first incarnation did not complete the significance of the incarnation. The purpose of God's second incarnation is to do the work of judgment in the last days and thoroughly wrest mankind from the grips of Satan, to relieve mankind of their satanic disposition, free them from the influence of Satan so that they may return to God and be gained by Him. Almighty God, Christ of the last days, has expressed the entirety of the truth to purify and save mankind, completed all the work of God in the flesh, and expressed all that God must express in His incarnate flesh. Let us read another two passages from Almighty God. Almighty God says: "**God will use words to conquer the universe. He will do this not by His incarnate flesh, but through using the utterances from the mouth of God become flesh to conquer all people in the entire universe; only this is the Word become flesh, and only this is the appearance of the Word in the flesh. Perhaps, to humans, it appears as if God has not done much work—but God has but to utter His words, and they will be thoroughly convinced and awed. Without facts, people shout and scream; with the words of God, they fall silent. God will surely accomplish this fact, for this is God's long-established plan: accomplishing the fact of the Word's arrival on earth**" ("The Millennial Kingdom Has Arrived" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**This stage of work precisely fulfills the inner meaning of 'the Word becomes flesh,' lent deeper meaning to 'the Word was with God, and the Word was God,' and allows you to firmly believe the words 'In the beginning was the Word.' Which is to say, at the time of**

creation God was possessed of words, His words were with Him and inseparable from Him, and in the final age, He makes even clearer the power and authority of His words, and allows man to see all of His ways—to hear all of His words. Such is the work of the final age. You must come to understand these things through and through. It is not a question of knowing the flesh, but of how you understand the flesh and the Word. This is the testimony that you must bear, that which everyone must know. Because this is the work of the second incarnation—and the last time that God becomes flesh—it fully completes the significance of the incarnation, thoroughly carries out and issues forth all of God's work in the flesh, and brings to an end the era of God's being in the flesh" ("Practice (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). God's two incarnations complete all the work of God in the flesh, that is, God's work of complete salvation of man. So, in the future, God will not be incarnated again. There will be no third or fourth time. Because God's work in the flesh has already been fully accomplished. This is what is meant by the statement that God has been incarnated twice to complete the significance of the incarnation.

God has been incarnated twice to complete the significance of the incarnation. For those who have yet to experience God's work of judgment in the last days, this is difficult to understand. Those who only experienced the work of redemption in the Age of Grace know that the Lord Jesus is the incarnate God. But few understand that the Lord Jesus' work was limited to redemption alone and He did not accomplish the work of the Word appearing in the flesh. Which is to

say, the Lord Jesus did not express the entirety of the truth of the incarnate God's complete salvation of mankind. So the Lord Jesus said, "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12–13). Now the Lord Jesus has returned to the flesh as the Son of man. He is Almighty God, Christ of the last days. He is here doing the work of judgment beginning with God's house, here expressing the entirety of truth which will purify and save mankind, the truth contained in "**The Word Appears in the Flesh**." God incarnate speaks for the first time in God's identity to the entire universe, proclaiming His word. He proclaims the details of God's management plan to save mankind, He expresses God's will, His demands toward all of mankind and man's destination. Let's see how Almighty God explains this. Almighty God says: "**It is fair to say that this is the first time since the creation of the world that God has addressed all mankind. Never before has God spoken to created mankind in such detail and so systematically. Of course, this is also the first time He has spoken so much, and for so long, to all mankind. It is totally unprecedented. What's more, these utterances form the first text expressed by God among mankind in which He exposes people, guides them, judges them, and speaks heart-to-heart to them and so, too, are they the first utterances in which God lets people know His footsteps, the place in which He lies, God's disposition, what God has and is, God's thoughts,**

and His concern for mankind. It can be said that these are the first utterances that God has spoken to mankind from the third heaven since the creation, and the first time that God has used His inherent identity to appear and express the voice of His heart to mankind amid words" (Introduction to God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**This is because I bring the end of mankind to the world, and from this point on, I lay bare My entire disposition before mankind, so that all who know Me and all those who do not may feast their eyes and see that I have indeed come to the human world, have come onto the earth where all things multiply. This is My plan, and My sole 'confession' since My creation of mankind. May you give your undivided attention to My every move, for My rod once again presses close to mankind, to all those who oppose Me**" ("Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

With regard to God's two incarnations to complete the significance of the incarnation, there are those that just don't get it, because they lack experience. When they hear of it, they just don't understand. The truth of the incarnation is indeed profound, it takes several communions for people to understand. Now let's go into the details of the work performed during God's two incarnations. During God's first incarnation, He performed the work of redemption, manifesting many miracles. He fed five thousand with just five loaves of bread and two fish. He calmed the wind and the waves with just a word. He resurrected Lazarus. Also, the Lord Jesus fasted and was tempted in the wilderness for forty days. He walked on the sea, etc.

Because the Lord Jesus' flesh performed miracles, and He was transfigured atop the mountain, in the eyes of us humans, though the Lord Jesus was incarnated in the flesh, He still possessed supernatural elements. He was different than the average man, miracles followed wherever He appeared. Also, the Lord Jesus did only one stage of the work, the work of redemption. He only expressed the truth of the work of redemption, mainly manifesting God's disposition of compassion and love. He did not express all the truths of the work of judgment and salvation, and He did not express to man God's righteous, holy and unoffendable disposition. So it cannot be said that the first incarnation completed the meaning of the incarnation. Just as Almighty God says: "**The stage of work which Jesus performed only fulfilled the essence of 'the Word was with God': The truth of God was with God, and the Spirit of God was with the flesh and was inseparable from that flesh. That is, the flesh of God incarnate was with the Spirit of God, which is greater proof that Jesus incarnate was the first incarnation of God**" ("Practice (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). God's incarnation in the last days is different from the first incarnation. In the second incarnation, God has not performed miracles, He is not at all supernatural. In outward appearance He looks like a normal and ordinary human, doing His work and speaking His word practically and realistically among men. He has expressed the truth to judge, purify and perfect man. Almighty God has revealed all of the mysteries of God's management plan, and manifested God's righteous and holy disposition, all that God is and has, God's will, and His demands of men. Also, He has judged and exposed man's satanic nature and corrupt dispositions

which resist God, and in so doing, conquered, perfected, exposed and eliminated man, each unto his own kind. God's work of judgment in the last days is truly meaningful. All of the truth with which God endows man in the last days is expressed within the normal humanity of His flesh, there is nothing supernatural about it. All we see is a normal man speaking His word and doing His work, but the word which Christ speaks is all the truth. It has authority and power, it can purify and save man. From the word of Christ, which judges and exposes the truth and substance of man's corruption, we see how God penetrates to the very core of man in His observation of him, how God has a thorough understanding of man. Man also comes to know God's righteous, holy, and unoffendable disposition. From Christ's admonishment and exhortation, we perceive God's compassion and concern for man. From the many ways in which Christ speaks and works, we come to appreciate God's almightiness and wisdom, the earnest intentions with which God works to save mankind, and God's true love and salvation of man. From the way in which Christ treats all people, matters, and things, we come to understand how God's pleasure, anger, sorrow, and happiness are all the realities of positive things, and how they are all the expression of God's disposition and natural manifestations of the substance of God's life. From Christ's word and work, we see how God is supreme and great and how He is humble and hidden, we gain a true understanding and knowledge of God's original disposition and true face, causing us to develop a thirst for the truth and reverence for God in our hearts, to truly love and obey God This is the effect of the word and work of God's second incarnation on us. The word and work of God's second incarnation not only allow man to see God

become flesh but also allow them to see the fact of God's word appearing in the flesh. God's word accomplishes all things. This normal, average flesh is the embodiment of the Spirit of truth. God incarnate is the truth, the way, and the life! He is the appearance of the only one true God! Only with the appearance and work of Almighty God has the significance of the incarnation been completed.

Let us read another two passages of Almighty God's word, so that our understanding of this truth and mystery can become even clearer. "**This stage of work precisely fulfills the inner meaning of 'the Word becomes flesh,' lent deeper meaning to 'the Word was with God, and the Word was God**'" ("Practice (4)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**During the Age of Kingdom, God incarnate speaks words to conquer all those who believe in Him. This is 'the Word appearing in the flesh'; God has come during the last days to do this work, which is to say, He has come to accomplish the actual significance of the Word appearing in the flesh. He only speaks words, and rarely is there the advent of facts. This is the very essence of the Word appearing in the flesh, and when God incarnate speaks His words, this is the appearance of the Word in the flesh, and is the Word coming into the flesh. 'In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God, and the Word became flesh.' This (the work of the appearance of the Word in the flesh) is the work that God will accomplish in the last days, and is the final chapter of His entire management plan, and so God has to come to earth and**

manifest His words in the flesh. That which is done today, that which will be done in the future, that which will be accomplished by God, man's final destination, those who will be saved, those who will be destroyed, and so on—all of this work that should be achieved in the end has all been clearly stated, and is all in order to accomplish the actual significance of the Word appearing in the flesh. The administrative decrees and constitution that were previously issued forth, those who will be destroyed, those who will enter into rest—these words must all be fulfilled. This is the work principally accomplished by God incarnate during the last days. He makes people understand where those predestined by God belong and where those not predestined by God belong, how His people and sons will be classified, what will happen to Israel, what will happen to Egypt—in the future, every one of these words will be accomplished. The pace of God's work is accelerating. God uses the word as the means to reveal to man what is to be done in every age, what is to be done by God incarnate during the last days, and His ministry that is to be performed, and these words are all in order to accomplish the actual significance of the Word appearing in the flesh" ("All Is Achieved by the Word of God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

After reading these passages of Almighty God's word, I trust that everyone has a bit more understanding of how God's two incarnations complete the significance of the incarnation! We are now aware of the fact that the work of God's salvation of mankind is

accomplished through the work of the incarnation. The stage of work which the Lord Jesus carried out was the work of redemption. The truth He expressed was very limited, so, having experienced the Lord Jesus' work, our knowledge of God was still limited. Almighty God has come to do the work of judgment in the last days, and expressed the entirety of the truth of God's righteous judgment of man's corruption. This allows man to see God's inherent disposition and know His righteous and holy substance. So, God incarnate in the last days has thoroughly completed God's work in the flesh. He has expressed the entirety of the truth which God is meant to express in the flesh, thereby fulfilling the fact of the Word appearing in the flesh. This is how God's two incarnations complete the meaning of the incarnation. God's two incarnations are indispensable, and supplement and complement each other. So one cannot say that God can only be incarnated once, or that He will be incarnated three or four times. Because God's two incarnations have already completed the work of God's salvation of mankind, and expressed the entirety of the mankind-saving truth that God's incarnations are meant to express. Thus, God's two incarnations have completed the meaning of the incarnation.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

Question 6: The Bible states that after the Lord Jesus was baptized, the heaven was opened, and the Holy Spirit descended upon the Lord Jesus like a dove, a voice said: "**This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased**" (Mat 3:17). And we believers all acknowledge that the Lord Jesus is Christ, the Son of God. Yet you've testified that the incarnate Christ is the appearance of God, is God Himself, that the Lord Jesus is God Himself and Almighty God is also God Himself. This differs from our previous understanding. So is the incarnate Christ God Himself or God's Son? Both situations seem reasonable to us, and both accord with the Bible. So which understanding is correct?

Answer: This is precisely a question that most believers have trouble understanding. When the incarnate Lord Jesus came to do the work of redemption of mankind, God became the Son of man, appearing and doing work among men. He not only opened the Age of Grace, but also initiated a new age in which God came personally into the human world to live alongside man. With great adoration, man called the Lord Jesus as Christ, the Son of God. At that time, the Holy Spirit also bore witness to the fact that the Lord Jesus is the beloved Son of God, and the Lord Jesus called God of heaven Father. As such, many people believed that the Lord Jesus was God's Son. In this way, the notion of this Father-Son relationship was formed. Now let's think for a moment. Does God say anywhere in Genesis that He has a son? Now during the Age of Law, did Jehovah God ever say that He had a son? He did not! This proves that there is only one God, there is no Father-Son relationship to speak of. Now some people may ask: During the Age of Grace, why did the Lord Jesus say that He was God's Son? Was the Lord Jesus Christ God's Son or God

Himself? You could say, this is a question that we believers have debated about throughout the ages. Many People sense the contradiction inherent in this issue, but they don't know how to explain it. The Lord Jesus is God, but is also God's Son, so is there also a God the Father? People are even less capable of explaining this issue. Over the past two millennia, there have been very few that recognized that the Lord Jesus Christ is God Himself, is the appearance of God. Actually, there is clear record of this in the Bible. In John 14:8, Philip asked of the Lord Jesus: "Lord, show us the Father, and it suffises us." Now, at that time, how did the Lord Jesus respond to Philip? The Lord Jesus said to Philip: "**Have I been so long time with you, and yet have you not known me, Philip? he that has seen me has seen the Father; and how say you then, Show us the Father? Believe you not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me? the words that I speak to you I speak not of myself: but the Father that dwells in me, he does the works. Believe me that I am in the Father, and the Father in me: or else believe me for the very works' sake**" (Jhn 14:9–11). Here, the Lord Jesus said very clearly, "he that has seen me has seen the Father." As you can see, the Lord Jesus is the appearance of God Himself. The Lord Jesus did not say here that He and God have a Father-Son relationship. He just said, "**I am in the Father, and the Father in me.**" "**I and my Father are one**" (Jhn 10:30). Now, according to the Lord Jesus' words, can we not confirm that the Lord Jesus is God Himself, there is only one God and there is no "Father-Son relationship" to speak of?

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

Question 7: If the Lord Jesus is God Himself, then why is it that when the Lord Jesus prays, He still prays to God the Father? There is certainly a mystery here to unfold. Please commune for us.

Answer: There is truly mystery to the Lord Jesus calling God of heaven Father in His prayers. When God is incarnated in the flesh, God's Spirit is hidden within the flesh, the flesh itself is unaware of the Spirit's presence. Just as we cannot feel our spirits within us. What's more, God's Spirit does not do anything supernatural within His flesh. So, even though the Lord Jesus was God become flesh, if God's Spirit had not spoken and testified to God Himself, the Lord Jesus could not have known that He was God's incarnation. So, in the Bible it is said, "**neither the Son, but the Father**" (Mak 13:32). Before the Lord Jesus performed His ministry, He lived within normal humanity. He really didn't know that He was the incarnation of God because God's Spirit within the flesh did not work in a supernatural way, He worked within normal confines, just like any other human. So, naturally, the Lord Jesus would pray to the heavenly Father, which is to say, from within His normal humanity, the Lord Jesus prayed to God's Spirit. This makes complete sense. When the Lord Jesus formally performed His ministry, the Holy Spirit began to speak and proclaim, bearing witness that He was the incarnate God. Only then did the Lord Jesus realize His true identity, that He had come to do the work of redemption. But when He was to be nailed to the cross, He still prayed to God the Father. This shows that Christ's substance is completely obedient to God.

Let's read another two passages of Almighty God's word to clarify our understanding of this issue. Almighty God says: "**When Jesus called God in heaven by the name of Father as He**

prayed, this was done only from the perspective of a created man, only because the Spirit of God had put on an ordinary and normal flesh and had the exterior cover of a created being. Even if within Him was the Spirit of God, His exterior appearance was still that of a normal man; in other words, He had become the 'Son of man' of which all men, including Jesus Himself, spoke. Given that He is called the Son of man, He is a person (whether man or woman, in any case one with the exterior shell of a human being) born into a normal family of ordinary people. Therefore, Jesus calling God in heaven by the name of Father was the same as how you at first called Him Father; He did so from the perspective of a created man. Do you still remember the Lord's Prayer that Jesus taught you to memorize? 'Our Father in heaven....' He asked all man to call God in heaven by the name of Father. And since He too called Him Father, He did so from the perspective of one who stands on an equal footing with you all. Since you called God in heaven by the name of Father, this shows that Jesus saw Himself to be on equal footing with you, and as a man on earth chosen by God (that is, the Son of God). If you call God Father, is this not because you are a created being? However great the authority of Jesus on earth, prior to the crucifixion, He was merely a Son of man, governed by the Holy Spirit (that is, God), and one of the earth's created beings, for He had yet to complete His work. Therefore, His calling God in heaven Father was solely His humility and obedience. His addressing God (that is, the

Spirit in heaven) in such a manner, however, does not prove that He was the Son of the Spirit of God in heaven. Rather, it was simply that His perspective was different, not that He was a different person. The existence of distinct persons is a fallacy! Prior to His crucifixion, Jesus was a Son of man bound by the limitations of the flesh, and He did not fully possess the authority of the Spirit. That is why He could only seek the will of God the Father from the perspective of a created being. It is as He thrice prayed in Gethsemane: 'Not as I will, but as You will.' Before He was laid on the cross, He was but the King of the Jews; He was Christ, the Son of man, and not a body of glory. That is why, from the standpoint of a created being, He called God Father." "**There are still those who say, 'Did not God expressly state that Jesus was His beloved Son?' Jesus is the beloved Son of God, in whom He is well pleased—this was certainly spoken by God Himself. That was God bearing witness to Himself, but merely from a different perspective, that of the Spirit in heaven bearing witness to His own incarnation. Jesus is His incarnation, not His Son in heaven. Do you understand? Do not the words of Jesus, 'I am in the Father, and the Father in Me,' indicate that They are one Spirit? And is it not because of the incarnation that They were separated between heaven and earth? In reality, They are still one; no matter what, it is simply God bearing witness to Himself. Owing to the change in ages, the requirements of the work, and the differing stages of His management plan, the name by**

which man calls Him also differs. When He came to carry out the first stage of work, He could only be called Jehovah, shepherd of the Israelites. In the second stage, the incarnate God could only be called Lord, and Christ. But at that time, the Spirit in heaven stated only that He was the beloved Son of God and made no mention of His being the only Son of God. This simply did not happen. How could God have an only child? Then would God not have become man? Because He was the incarnation, He was called the beloved Son of God, and, from this, came the relationship between Father and Son. It was simply because of the separation between heaven and earth" ("Does the Trinity Exist?" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God has expressed things so clearly. When the Lord Jesus was working among men, it was actually God's Spirit clothed in flesh as a man working and appearing to man. No matter how the Lord Jesus was expressing His word or praying to God the Father, His substance was divinity, not humanity. God is Spirit, invisible to man. When God becomes clothed in flesh, man sees only flesh, he cannot see God's Spirit. If the Holy Spirit had directly borne witness to the fact that the incarnate Lord Jesus was God, man wouldn't have accepted it. Because, at the time, no one even knew what it meant for God to be incarnated. They just came into contact with God's incarnation and had very little understanding. They never imagined that this regular Son of man would be the embodiment of the Spirit of God, that is, the appearance of God in the flesh. Even though the Lord Jesus expressed much of His word in the course of His work, brought man the way, "Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at

hand," and manifested many miracles, fully revealing God's authority and power, man failed to recognize from the Lord Jesus' word and work that the Lord Jesus was God Himself that is, was the appearance of God. So, God just worked according to the stature of people at that time, He didn't make it hard for them. The Holy Spirit could only testify within the understanding of the people at that time, so He called the Lord Jesus God's beloved Son, temporarily allowing man to think of the Lord Jesus as God's Son. This way fit in better with people's conceptions, and was easier to accept because, at that time, the Lord Jesus was only doing the work of redemption. No matter how people called the Lord Jesus, the important thing was that they accepted that the Lord Jesus was the Savior, had their sins remitted, and were thus qualified to enjoy God's grace. So, God's Spirit bore witness to the Lord Jesus in this way because it was more suitable to the stature of the people at that time. This completely fulfills the Lord Jesus' word: "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12–13).

Despite the fact that we can't see God's Spirit, when God's Spirit becomes clothed in flesh, God's disposition, all that He has and is, His almightiness and wisdom are all expressed through His flesh. From the Lord Jesus Christ's word and work and the disposition which He expresses, we can be entirely sure that the Lord Jesus is God Himself. The Lord Jesus word and work are full of authority and power. What He says becomes true, what He demands is realized. As

soon as He speaks, His words become reality. Just as one word from the Lord Jesus was enough to forgive man his sinfulness and bring the dead back to life. One word calmed the wind and the sea and so on. From the Lord Jesus' word and work, can we not see God's authority and power, which rule over all things? Have we not seen God's almightiness, wisdom, and wondrous works? The Lord Jesus expressed the way in His words, Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand. He initiated the Age of Grace, concluding the Age of Law, expressed God's compassionate and loving disposition and completed the work of mankind's redemption. did the Lord Jesus do the work of God Himself? The Lord Jesus' word and work are the direct expression of the Spirit of God. Is it not proof that God's Spirit came in the flesh to speak to and work for man, to appear to them? Could it possibly be that no matter how God's Spirit speaks and works in the flesh, we are incapable of recognizing Him? Can this outer shell of the flesh really prevent us from recognizing the divine substance of Christ? Could it be that, when God's Spirit becomes clothed in flesh to speak and do work, no matter how much we experience we would still be incapable of recognizing God's appearance and work? If this is the case, then we are far too thick-headed in our belief. How else may we attain God's commendation?

Excerpted from the movie script of The Mystery of Godliness: The Sequel

VIII. Questions and Answers on Dissecting the Essence of the Pharisees

Question 1: You've testified that when the Lord returns in the last days, He will first become flesh and arrive in secret, and after making a group of overcomers, publicly descend with the clouds to appear before all people. Such a communication makes sense. But for 2,000 years, most believers in the Lord have all been waiting for Him to descend with the clouds. Religious pastors and elders also often say so. How could we possibly be wrong by waiting in accordance with the Bible's prophecy? This is definitely impossible!

Answer: What kind of basis do you have for saying something like that? Is what you have said in line with the words of the Lord Jesus? Are they based on God's words? If what you are saying is completely based on man's notions and imaginations, that would be resisting the Lord! Let's see how the Pharisees waited for the arrival of the Messiah and why they nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. Initially, the Jewish Pharisees were full of notions and imaginations when it came to the Messiah. They saw the biblical prophecy: "**For to us a child is born, to us a son is given: and the government shall be on his shoulder**" (Isa 9:6). "**But you, Bethlehem Ephratah, though you be little among the thousands of Judah, yet out of you shall he come forth to me that is to be ruler in Israel; whose goings forth have been from of old, from everlasting**" (Mic 5:2). Based on the words of the Bible prophecies and various long-term fantasies and deductions toward the arrival of the Messiah, the Pharisees determined that the Lord would definitely be called Messiah and would certainly be born to a wealthy family. Further, He would be like David and become the King of Israel, leading them to break away from the rule of the Roman government. Most Israelites probably

thought this way. But God did not fulfill these prophecies in accordance with their notions and imaginations, so the Pharisees tried to find all kinds of accusations against the Lord Jesus and condemned and blasphemed the Lord Jesus. Even though at the time the Lord Jesus expressed many truths and performed many miracles, fully demonstrating God's authority and power, the Pharisees did not care how profound the Lord Jesus' words were or how great His authority was. As long as it did not conform with their notions and imaginations, as long as He was not born to a wealthy family and His appearance not noble and dignified, as long as His name was not Messiah, they would condemn and resist. Due to their truth-hating nature, they ultimately nailed the Lord Jesus, who expressed truths and performed redemption work, to the cross! Brothers and sisters, are the Pharisees detestable? Should they be cursed! The sins of the Pharisees in resisting and condemning the Lord Jesus thoroughly exposed their truth-loathing, truth-hating satanic nature. This shows that their hearts were not genuinely looking forward to the Messiah saving them from sin, but were instead looking forward to what? They were looking forward to the King of the Jews helping them to break away from the rule of the Roman government, so they would no longer have to suffer like slaves! They believed in God and anticipated the arrival of the Messiah all because they wanted to satisfy their own personal desires and protect their status. Let's think about it. What mistake did the Pharisees commit in waiting for the coming of the Messiah? Why were they cursed and punished by God? This is really thought-provoking! Why did the Pharisees resist and condemn the Lord Jesus when He appeared to perform His work? What nature and substance of the Pharisees was demonstrated here?

These are problems people who long for God's appearance should understand! If we cannot see through these problems, then when it comes to receiving the returned Lord Jesus, we might very well end up on the same God-resisting path as the Pharisees!

How did the Pharisees wait for the Messiah to arrive? Why did they crucify the Lord Jesus? Just what is the source of these questions? Let's look at what Almighty God says! Almighty God says, "**Do you wish to know the root of why the Pharisees opposed Jesus? Do you wish to know the essence of the Pharisees? They were full of fantasies about the Messiah. What is more, they believed only that the Messiah would come, yet did not seek the life truth. And so, even today they still await the Messiah, for they have no knowledge of the way of life, and do not know what the way of truth is. How, say you, could such foolish, stubborn and ignorant people gain God's blessing? How could they behold the Messiah? They opposed Jesus because they did not know the direction of the Holy Spirit's work, because they did not know the way of truth spoken by Jesus, and, furthermore, because they did not understand the Messiah. And since they had never seen the Messiah and had never been in the company of the Messiah, they made the mistake of clinging in vain to the name of the Messiah while opposing the essence of the Messiah by any means possible. These Pharisees in essence were stubborn, arrogant, and did not obey the truth. The principle of their belief in God was: No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called**

the Messiah. Are these views not preposterous and ridiculous?" ("By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). After reading the words of Almighty God, the essence and source of the Pharisees' resistance of the Lord Jesus in waiting for the Messiah should all be clear to us now. So in regard to receiving the Lord's return, if man relies on their notions and imaginations, and simply waits like fools for the Lord to descend with the clouds, rather than pursuing the truth and listening to God's voice, then won't they be walking the same God-resisting path of the Pharisees? Then just what will their outcome be?

Now, Almighty God's kingdom gospel has been spreading throughout Mainland China for more than 20 years. It has long spread to various denominations. During this period, due to the CCP government's furious suppression and crackdown, coupled with the propaganda campaign of the CCP's media, Almighty God is already a household name that everybody knows about. Later, all the truths expressed by Almighty God and the various videos and films produced by the Church of Almighty God have been gradually released online, spreading across the world. I trust people in religious circles have all heard about the various testimony methods of the Church of Almighty God. So many people have testified that God has come. This completely fulfills the prophecy of the Lord Jesus: "**And at midnight there was a cry made, Behold, the bridegroom comes; go you out to meet him**" (Mat 25:6). Then why do religious pastors and elders still furiously condemn and resist Almighty God's work in the last days? There are so many prophecies about the return of the Lord in the Bible, so why are they so fixated

on the prophecy about the Lord descending with the clouds? Why don't they seek at all when they hear there are testimonies of the Lord's coming? Why, when they know that Almighty God has expressed many truths and have seen the reality of God's work, do they still stubbornly hold on to their notions and imaginations in resisting and condemning God's work of the last days? Do these people love the truth and genuinely look forward to the Lord's arrival or not? Are they wise virgins or foolish virgins? If they are wise virgins and genuinely look forward to the Lord's return, then why, when they hear God's voice and see the kingdom gospel flourishing, do they still have to stubbornly condemn and resist? Could this be their sincerity in longing for and hoping for the Lord to appear? Could this be their true expression in rejoicing the Lord's return? Ultimately, to be frank, their belief in the Lord and longing for the return of the Lord Jesus are fake, but their longing to be blessed and enter the kingdom of heaven is real! They believe in the Lord not so they can pursue the truth and gain life, not so they can gain the truth and get away from sin. What do they care about the most? It's when the Lord will descend to take them directly up into the kingdom of heaven and make them escape the suffering of the flesh and enjoy the blessings of the kingdom of heaven. This is their true purpose of believing in God! Tell me. Apart from this reason, what reason do they have for rejecting Almighty God, who expresses truths to save mankind? Everybody can think about it. If someone loves the truth and genuinely longs for God to appear, how will they act when they hear that the Lord has come? Will they not listen, not look, not get in touch with it? Will they blindly deny, condemn and resist? Definitely not. Because a person who sincerely longs for God's appearance and

welcomes God's arrival looks forward to true light appearing, truth and righteousness ruling in their heart. They look forward to God coming to save mankind and help people thoroughly escape sin to become holy and be gained by God. But those who only wait for the Lord to descend with the clouds yet deny and reject Almighty God, especially those religious leaders who furiously condemn and resist Almighty God for the sake of protecting their status and livelihood—these are all people who despise the truth and hate the truth. They are all non-believers and antichrists exposed by God's work of the last days. After God in the flesh completes His salvation work, these people will fall into the once-in-a-million-year disaster, weeping and gnashing their teeth. Then the prophecy of the Lord descending with the clouds to appear publicly will be completely fulfilled: "**Behold, he comes with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him**" (Rev 1:7).

let's take a look at what Almighty God's words say. Almighty God says: "**People who do not receive the truth, yet blindly await the arrival of Jesus upon white clouds, will surely blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, and they are the category that shall be destroyed. You merely wish for the grace of Jesus, and merely want to enjoy the blissful realm of heaven, yet you have never obeyed the words spoken by Jesus, and have never received the truth expressed by Jesus when He returns to flesh. What will you hold up in exchange for the fact of Jesus' return upon a white cloud? Is it the sincerity in which you repeatedly commit sins, and then speak your confession, over and over? What will you**

offer in sacrifice to Jesus who returns upon a white cloud? Is it the years of work with which you exalt yourselves? What will you hold up to make the returned Jesus trust you? Is it that arrogant nature of yours, which does not obey any truth?

... I tell you, those who believe in God because of the signs are surely the category that shall be destroyed. Those who are incapable of receiving the words of Jesus who has returned to flesh are surely the progeny of hell, the descendants of the archangel, the category that shall be subjected to everlasting destruction. Many people may not care what I say, but I still want to tell every so-called saint who follows Jesus that, when you see Jesus descend from the heaven upon a white cloud with your own eyes, this will be the public appearance of the Sun of righteousness. Perhaps that will be a time of great excitement for you, yet you should know that the time when you witness Jesus descend from the heaven is also the time when you go down to hell to be punished. That will be the time of the end of God's management plan and it will be when God rewards the good and punishes the wicked. For the judgment of God will have ended before man sees signs, when there is only the expression of truth. Those who accept the truth and do not seek signs, and thus have been purified, shall have returned before the throne of God and entered the Creator's embrace. Only those who persist in the belief that 'The Jesus who does not ride upon a white cloud is a false Christ' shall be subjected to everlasting

punishment, for they only believe in the Jesus who exhibits signs, but do not acknowledge the Jesus who proclaims severe judgment and releases the true way of life. And so it can only be that Jesus deals with them when He openly returns upon a white cloud. They are too stubborn, too confident in themselves, too arrogant. How could such degenerates be rewarded by Jesus?" ("By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Spell

Question 2: That pastors and elders are all chosen and ordained by the Lord, and that they are all people who serve the Lord. Obeying pastors and elders is obeying the Lord. If we resist and condemn pastors and elders, then we are resisting the Lord. Besides, Only pastors and elders understand the Bible and can interpret the Bible. Only they can shepherd us. As long as what pastors and elders say conforms with the Bible and has a basis in the Bible, we should comply and obey. As long as what pastors and elders do conforms with the Bible, we should accept and follow. How could that be wrong?

Answer: In religion, some people think religious pastors and elders are all chosen and established by the Lord. Therefore, people should obey them. Does such a view have a basis in the Bible? Is it evidenced by the word of the Lord? Does it have the testimony of the Holy Spirit and the confirmation of the Holy Spirit's work? If the answers are all no, then doesn't the majority's belief that pastors and elders are all chosen and established by the Lord arise from people's notions and imaginations? Let's think about it. In the Age of Law, Moses was chosen and established by God. Does this mean that all Jewish leaders during the Age of Law were chosen and set up by God? In the Age of Grace, the 12 apostles of the Lord Jesus were all personally chosen and anointed by the Lord Jesus Himself. Does this mean that all pastors and elders in the Age of Grace were personally chosen and set up by the Lord? A lot of people like to follow set rules and don't approach things in accordance with facts. As a result, they blindly worship and follow people. What is the problem here? Why can't people distinguish between these things? Why can't they seek the truth on these things? We can see from what is recorded in the

Bible that in every age of His work, God chooses and anoints some people to coordinate with His work. And those appointed and used by God Himself are confirmed by His word. Even if they aren't, at least there is the confirmation of the work of the Holy Spirit. Like during the Age of Law, God anointed Moses to lead the Israelites. That is proven by God's words. Jehovah God said, "**Now therefore, behold, the cry of the children of Israel is come to me: and I have also seen the oppression with which the Egyptians oppress them. Come now therefore, and I will send you to Pharaoh, that you may bring forth my people the children of Israel out of Egypt**" (Exo 3:9–10). In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus anointed the 12 apostles to shepherd the churches. This is also evidenced by the Lord's words. Just as the Lord Jesus said when He anointed Peter: "**Simon, son of John, love you me? ... Feed my sheep**" (Jhn 21:17). "**And I will give to you the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatever you shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven**" (Mat 16:19). We can see people appointed and used by God are confirmed by God's word, even if there's no word of God as proof, there should at least be the confirmation of the work of the Holy Spirit. All their work is upheld by God. Obeying their work and leadership is obeying God. Any of us who resists a person God anoints and uses is resisting God and will be cursed and punished by God. Just like in the Age of Law, Korah, Dathan and their people resisted Moses. What happened in the end? They were directly punished by God. God caused the earth to open and swallow them all. In the Age of Grace, the apostles anointed by the Lord Jesus all have the confirmation of the Lord's word. But are

today's religious pastors and elders anointed by the Lord? Is it evidenced by the Lord's word? Most of them are cultivated by theological schools and have graduate certificates in theology, which they relied on to become pastors, not because the Holy Spirit personally bore witness to them and used them. Isn't that a fact? Who among us have seen the Holy Spirit personally bear witness to or anoint any pastor? It never happens! If they are truly anointed by the Lord, there would surely be the true testimony of the Holy Spirit and many believers as witnesses. Therefore, religious pastors and elders are all not anointed by the Lord. This is certain! I've heard that there are even some pastors who don't believe the Lord Jesus came from conception by the Holy Spirit. They don't think "conception by the Holy Spirit" has any basis or conforms with science. It is even less likely these people would admit that Christ is the manifestation of God. If such pastors existed during the time when the Lord Jesus worked, they certainly would not have accepted the Lord Jesus. Then how would they treat the appearance and work of God incarnate in the last days? They would all be like the Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees, furiously condemning and opposing the Lord Jesus. Then are such pastors and elders people who genuinely obey God? They don't even believe in God incarnate, and moreover don't acknowledge the truths expressed by God incarnate. Aren't these people antichrists? So is the view that "Religious pastors and elders are all anointed and used by the Lord" still tenable? If we insist that these pastors and elders are anointed and used by God, then isn't that slandering and blaspheming God? Isn't such a viewpoint too absurd, too fallacious? Isn't this twisting facts and confounding black and white? Would God anoint and use these unbelievers and

antichrists to lead God's chosen people? Certainly not! All those anointed and used by God are personally testified by God, and at least have the confirmation and the effects of the work of the Holy Spirit, and can help God's chosen people attain life supply and true shepherding. Because God is righteous, holy, all those anointed and used by God are certainly in line with God's will. They surely won't be hypocritical Pharisees, and moreover not truth-hating, God-opposing antichrists.

Then let's have a look at today's religious pastors and leaders. Most of them are cultivated from theological schools and not personally anointed and used by God. They merely study theology and the Bible. Their work and preaching only focuses on talking about Bible knowledge, theology, or Bible characters and stories, historical backgrounds, and so forth. What they practice is also just teaching people to practice religious rituals and follow rules. They never pay attention to communicating the truth in God's words, nor do they lead people to practice and experience God's words or observe God's commandments. They never discuss how to know themselves and real experiences in life entry, and moreover never discuss true knowledge of God. Can such work and preaching attain the work of the Holy Spirit? Can such service satisfy God's intentions? Can it lead us to practice the truth and enter the right track of believing in God? Explaining the Bible this way, aren't they going their own path and resisting God? Especially when Almighty God is expressing truths and performing His judgment work of the last days, these religious leaders clearly know that Almighty God's words are all the truth and can purify and save people, and yet they do not seek and accept. Even more loathsome is that they won't allow

believers to read Almighty God's words or listen to God's voice. For the sake of protecting their status and livelihoods, they furiously slander and condemn Almighty God, even coordinating with the CCP, the satanic regime, in arresting and persecuting evangelists. How are the actions and conduct of these pastors and elders any different to those of the Pharisees who resisted the Lord Jesus back in the day? Are they not stumbling blocks to us accepting the true way? How could these truth-hating, God-opposing people be anointed and used by God? Would God appoint these truth-hating people who obstruct God's will to lead God's chosen people? Certainly not. That's the truth!

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Spell

Question 3: Paul clearly said in the Bible: “Take heed therefore to yourselves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghost has made you overseers, to feed the church of God …” (Act 20:28). This proves that pastors and elders are all anointed by the Holy Spirit. Doesn’t being anointed by the Holy Spirit represent being anointed by God? God anointed pastors and elders as overseers to all the flock. That can’t be wrong!

Answer: Some absurd people in religious circles often misuse words from the Bible to make up rules. They claim that the hypocritical Pharisees and religious pastors are all anointed and used by God. Isn’t this severely resisting and blaspheming God? Many people just don’t know how to distinguish. They believe in the Lord but don’t magnify Him, instead advocating gifts, status and power, and also blindly believe in and worship pastors and elders. They can’t distinguish whether one has the work of the Holy Spirit and the reality of the truth. They simply think as long as one has a pastor certificate and gifts and can analyze the Bible, it means they are approved and anointed by God, and that they should be obeyed. Some people are even more absurd and think obeying pastors and elders is obeying God, and that resisting pastors and elders is resisting God. If we go according to such notions, the Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees who were all familiar with the Bible and often explained the Bible to others, but resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus when He appeared and worked, and even crucified Him, were they people anointed and used by God? If one followed the Jewish leaders in resisting and condemning the Lord Jesus, does that mean they were obeying God? Would you say those who rejected Jewish leaders and followed the Lord Jesus were resisting God? This

shows that the view “Obeying pastors and elders is obeying God, resisting pastors and elders is resisting God” really is too absurd and fallacious! We believers of God should be clear that if religious pastors and elders resist God, and the path they lead betrays the truth and opposes God, then we should stand on the side of God, expose them, and reject them. That is true obedience of God. That is forsaking darkness for light and satisfying God’s intentions. Therefore, when it comes to how to deal with pastors and elders, we should pursue the truth and understand God’s intentions. If pastors and elders are people who love the truth and pursue the truth, then they will surely have the work of the Holy Spirit and be able to lead us to practice and experience God’s words, fear God and depart from evil. Respecting and following such people accords with God’s intentions! If they don’t love the truth and only care about explaining their Bible knowledge and theological theories to show off and build themselves up, to make us worship and obey them, and don’t exalt God, bear witness to God, and don’t lead us to practice and experience God’s words, then they are people who have been condemned and cursed by God and we will be opposing God if we still worship, follow and obey them. This would be completely against God’s intentions.

Most people currently in religious circles are unable to distinguish the pastors and elders essence of opposing God. They believe that as long as pastors and elders understand the Bible and can explain the Bible, and that as long as what pastors and elders say conform with the Bible and are based on the Bible, then people should follow and obey. Such a viewpoint sounds right, but when we think about it, do pastors and elders really understand the Bible? Do

they really know God's work? Does having Bible knowledge represent knowing God? Can listening to pastors and elders explain the Bible really guide people to understand the truth and know and obey God? I'm afraid no one in religious circles are able to see through these questions. Let's think back to how the Jewish Pharisees appeared to others as though they understood the Bible and were good at explaining the Bible, but when the Lord Jesus worked, they did not recognize Him and instead relied on letters and rules from the Bible to try and trap the Lord Jesus any chance they got. They resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus, and because the Lord Jesus expressed God's words, they condemned and blasphemed the Lord Jesus, accusing His words of being blasphemy. In the end, they cruelly nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross. Just what was their problem? Weren't they arrogant and unknowing of God? These facts are sufficient to prove that having Bible knowledge and being good at explaining the Bible does not mean that a person understands the truth and knows God, and it does not mean that they know God's work! Those who truly experience God's work all pay attention to experiencing and practicing God's words. In God's words they see God's wondrous deeds, understand all the care and thought God has expended in saving mankind, and see clearly all the words expressed by God in the course of His work are all the reality of truth that people should enter. They also have true understanding of why God expresses these truths, what His intentions are, and what He seeks to achieve through His work on people. Only such people truly understand God's work. Only such people truly understand the Bible and the truth. People who truly understand the Bible all focus on communicating God's words in the Bible and communicating God's

intentions, God's requirements of man, and God's work and His disposition, and can lead us into the reality of the truth and make us fear God and obey God. What do religious pastors and elders preach? Just Bible knowledge and theological theory. What is the consequence of communicating such things? In the end, it can only make people more and more arrogant. They don't give in to anyone just because they understand a bit of Bible knowledge. As a result, when God becomes flesh to express the truth, they deny God, resist God, and oppose God! By the look of things, pastors and elders explaining Bible knowledge and theological theory is actually resisting God! Aren't they just like the Pharisees from before? Why aren't these religious pastors and elders able to communicate their knowledge and experience of their own practice of God's words? Why aren't they able to communicate their true understanding of God's work and His disposition? It's precisely because they don't have genuine experience of God's words and the truth and what they focus on is merely studying the Bible so they can attain Bible knowledge, which is why they cannot possibly receive the work of the Holy Spirit. So how could their service possibly receive God's approval? God has become flesh as the Son of man and expressed the truth to perform His judgment work of the last days, revealing every person. Those who love the truth, hate the truth, good servants, evil servants, those who serve God, and those who serve mammon will all be revealed. As for those religious pastors and elders, they all take the verses out of context and rely on their notions and imaginations to misconstrue the Bible, even determining that "There is no utterance and work of God outside of the Bible" and also spreading all sorts of fallacies to resist and condemn God's work in the last days. Is this not

misleading and deceiving people? Who knows how many believers have been harmed and ruined by their spreading of such fallacies? How many people have lost chance to be taken before God's throne and attend the wedding banquet with God and the rare opportunity to be made into an overcomer by God? Aren't these pastors and elders stumbling blocks and obstacles to people accepting the true way?

Let's read some of Almighty God's words and we'll be able to discern religious pastors and elders even better! Almighty God says: "**Look at the leaders of each denomination—they are all arrogant and self-righteous, and their interpretations of the Bible lack context and are guided by their own imaginings. They all rely on gifts and erudition to do their work. If they could not preach at all, would people follow them? They do, after all, possess some knowledge and can preach on some doctrine, or they know how to win others over and make use of some artifice. They use these to bring people before themselves and deceive them. Nominally, those people believe in God, but in reality, they follow their leaders. When they encounter someone preaching the true way, some of them say, 'We have to consult our leader about our faith.' A human is the medium of their faith in God; is that not a problem? What have those leaders become, then? Have they not become Pharisees, false shepherds, antichrists, and stumbling blocks to people's acceptance of the true way?**" ("Only to Pursue the Truth Is Truly to Believe in God" in Records of Christ's Talks).

"**There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God's work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God's will. They are all worthless, vile people, each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of 'sound constitution,' but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls?**" ("All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God has exposed the true essence of pastors and elders who resist God and deceive man while serving God very clearly! Religious pastors and elders often take verses out of context and misinterpret the Bible when explaining it. They rely on the notions and imaginations to explain Bible knowledge and theological theory to show off, build themselves up, and make people worship and follow them. But they never exalt the Lord, bear witness to the Lord, and instead plan to place everyone under their control. Why are there so many religious people who worship pastors and elders as well as those who can explain the Bible, but not many people can

magnify the Lord? What is the problem here? Especially during Almighty God's work of judgment in the last days, there are many people who don't investigate and pursue the truth. Do these people believe in the Lord or pastors? We should all self-reflect on these problems. The Lord Jesus already exposed the religious Pharisees' resistance against God long ago, so how come we don't have any discernment when it comes to religious pastors and elders in the last days? And there are still many people who worship and follow them. They have unknowingly embarked on the path of resisting God, and are despised and hated by God like the Pharisees. What kind of problem is this? Isn't this the result of being deceived by pastors and elders? Now, many who love the truth and hunger for God's appearance have seen through the antichrist nature of religious pastors and elders. They have all left the religion and accepted Almighty God's work of the last days and are attending the wedding supper of the Lamb. As for those who still worship and follow religious pastors and elders, they will be forsaken by God's work. The great disaster is about to descend. If we don't look into and accept Almighty God's work of the last days, all we can do is fall into the disaster, weeping and gnashing our teeth!

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Spell

Question 4: Pastors in religious circles are all familiar with the Bible. They often interpret the Bible in churches and exalt the Bible. We've always thought that they should be people who know God. Then why has the work of God incarnate in the last days been furiously condemned and resisted by the majority of pastors in the religious world? I believe what the majority of pastors and leaders in the religious community condemn can't possibly be the true way!

Answer: In investigating whether it is God's work, we should not judge according to whether the majority of religious leaders accept it. Think back to when the Lord Jesus appeared to do His work. Who were the ones that crucified the Lord Jesus? Wasn't it the religious leaders who were familiar with the Bible and often interpreted the Bible to others? What does this fact tell us? A person who is familiar with the Bible and can interpret the Bible isn't necessarily someone who knows God's work, and moreover not someone who can certainly be said to know God. The Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees were all familiar with the Bible, and yet they were the ones who resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus. They were all antichrists. Is this not a fact? If a person familiar with the Bible can't even see through this fact, does that count as understanding the Bible? If you now still rely on the views of the majority of religious leaders as the basis for determining whether it is God's appearance and work, then isn't that totally absurd? If you still insist on relying on the view of the majority of religious leaders on this issue, then aren't you also denying the appearance and work of the Lord Jesus? Without a doubt, that makes you just like the Pharisees—someone who resists God. When we seek and examine the true way, we should decide according to whether there is the

Holy Spirit's work and whether there is the expression of truth. That's the accurate criterion. Basing it on the views of the majority of religious leaders is certainly resisting God, and you will be condemned and eliminated by God.

Most believers are of the view that pastors are all familiar with the Bible and can often explain and exalt the Bible, which means they should be people who know God. However, when God once again becomes flesh to perform His work in the last days, why do these religious pastors familiar with the Bible furiously condemn and resist God's work of the last days? This is something that puzzles a lot of people. This is actually not hard to figure out. Back then, the Pharisees were all familiar with the Bible and often expounded on and exalted the Bible in synagogues. But when the Lord Jesus came, they furiously resisted and persecuted Him, and nailed the Lord Jesus to the cross alive. This fact is sufficient to prove that those who often interpret and exalt the Bible aren't necessarily people who know God. The Pharisees could all interpret the Bible. Then why was it that, when they knew everything expressed by the Lord Jesus was the truth, they could still condemn and resist Him? Since they weren't able to recognize God's voice at all, then how could they know God's disposition and essence? Religious pastors are just like the Pharisees. Though they are familiar with the Bible, all they preach are some Bible knowledge and theological theories, as well as the characters and historical background of the Bible. They are unable to communicate any experience or testimony of practicing the Lord's word, or any true knowledge of God. This is enough to show that they are not people who experience God's work and practice God's word. How could they possibly be people who know God?

Their view of God is full of notions and imaginations. They don't know God's disposition and His intention of saving mankind at all, so that when God appears to do His work in the last days, they use the Bible knowledge and doctrines they are equipped with to define God's word and work, and end up playing the role of the Pharisees, who believed in God yet resisted Him. Let's take a look at a passage of Almighty God's word: "**Man himself cannot fabricate a true knowledge of God. This is not something that man himself can imagine, nor is it the consequence of the Holy Spirit's special favor granted to a single person. Rather, it is a knowledge that comes after man has experienced the work of God, and it is a knowledge of God that only comes after having experienced the facts of God's work**" ("Knowing the Three Stages of God's Work Is the Path to Knowing God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Almighty God makes it very clear. Knowledge of God comes from practically experiencing God's work and practicing God's word, and is achieved through receiving the work of the Holy Spirit. It is not achieved through familiarizing oneself with the Bible. For thousands of years, no one has achieved true knowledge of God through reading the Bible. Moreover, there is not one person who has been cleansed and received God's approval because of being familiar with the Bible.

Of all those who received God's approval throughout history, none achieved knowledge of God through reading the Bible. It was in the process of practicing God's word and obeying God's work that they gradually gained true knowledge and fear of God. Take Abraham and Job for example. They were both people who magnified God and revered God in their hearts. It was through their

experiences that they got to know the almightiness and wisdom of God who dominates all. They saw that everything man has is due to God's blessing and grace, generating their true faith in God. That is why they could still extol the holy name of God amid trials to create beautiful and resounding testimonies, and received God's blessing as a result. Peter recognized that the Lord Jesus is the Christ, the Son of the living God, not through familiarizing himself with the Old Testament, but through pursuing the truth, and practically obeying the word and work of the Lord Jesus, attaining the work of the Holy Spirit, and gradually getting to know God's loveliness and His disposition and all that He has and is. In the end, he managed to achieve an ultimate love for God and obedience unto death, creating a beautiful and resounding testimony for God. In addition, during the time the Lord Jesus worked, those who followed Him all perceived in His utterance the authority and power of His word. They recognized that it was the voice of God and decided to follow the Lord Jesus. They also created beautiful and resounding testimonies in spreading the gospel of the Lord Jesus. When God returns to flesh and appears to work in the last days, there are a lot of people who never believed in the Lord Jesus and never read the Bible but who have attained the work of the Holy Spirit through accepting and obeying the judgment of Almighty God's word. They have gradually developed true knowledge of and obedience toward God, and created overcoming testimonies amid the cruel persecution of the regime of the CCP. This is a fact for all to see. Only those who have experienced God's work and ultimately created beautiful and resounding testimonies for God can be said to be people who truly know God and obey God. Those who only interpret the Bible but have not truly

borne witness are to be regarded as religious charlatans. Those religious Pharisees and pastors despise and hate the truth. They familiarize themselves with the Bible and explain the Bible not because they pursue the truth and knowledge of God. Rather, it is completely for showing off, and deceiving and caging people. When God becomes flesh and appears to do His work, they even view the truth-expressing Christ as the enemy, essentially crucifying God again, and therefore becoming cursed by God, which completely exposes their truth-hating, God-opposing antichrist essence. The work of God incarnate in the last days has revealed all mankind, classifying people according to their kind. God's work really is almighty and wise!

If people who believe in God don't love the truth and don't pay attention to practicing God's word, then they are not truly experiencing God's work. If people only care about equipping themselves with Bible knowledge and theological theories to show off, to build up their own prestige so people can worship and follow them, then they will naturally become hypocritical Pharisees. Almighty God says: "**Those who only care about the words of the Bible and are concerned neither with the truth nor with seeking My footsteps—they are against Me, for they limit Me according to the Bible, constrain Me within the Bible, and so are blasphemous in the extreme toward Me. How could such people come before Me? They pay no heed to My deeds, or My will, or the truth, but instead obsess over words—words that kill. How could such people be compatible with Me?**" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

“There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God’s work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God’s will. They are all worthless, vile people, each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of ‘sound constitution,’ but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls? Those who hold themselves in high esteem in God’s presence are the most abject of men, while those who humble themselves are the most honored. And those who think they know the work of God and who are, moreover, capable of proclaiming the work of God to others with great fanfare even as they look directly at Him—these are the most ignorant of men. Such people are without the testimony of God, arrogant and full of conceit” (“All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God” in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God’s words have completely exposed the truth-hating and truth-despising nature and essence of the religious Pharisees,

pastors and leaders. They familiarize themselves with the Bible and explain the Bible all so they can stand out and show off, so they can use it to deceive and cage people and protect their own status and livelihoods. It is not at all to communicate the truth and exalt God, to testify to God, and to bring people before Him. They pretend to be godly on the outside, but in reality they don't have any reverence for God in their hearts whatsoever. When Almighty God expresses the truth and performs His judgment work of the last days, to protect their own status and livelihoods, they do everything they can to make up rumors and release fallacies to delimit God and condemn God's work of the last days, saying things like "God's word and work are all in the Bible, anything beyond the Bible is heresy," and "Believing in God is believing in the Bible, the Bible represents God," and so forth, and spreading all sorts of fallacies to deceive and prevent people from seeking and investigating the true way. So it turns out that pastors are trying to protect their own status and livelihoods. That's why they resist and condemn Almighty God! It shows that when religious pastors use their opportunities of explaining the Bible to interpret the Bible falsely and out of context, to delimit God and oppose God, it is completely due to their truth-hating and God-resisting satanic nature. Throughout history, the religious world has been ruled by hypocritical Pharisees and antichrists. They worship the Bible and exalt the Bible all so they can deceive and control God's chosen people and consolidate their own status and livelihoods. It is not at all for exalting God and testifying to God, or to guide people into the reality of truth and bring them before God. Therefore, when Almighty God comes to perform His work of the last days, the truth-hating, God-resisting antichrist nature of religious pastors and

leaders is thoroughly exposed. Under the guise of “defending the true way and protecting the flock,” they specialize in opposing Almighty God, Christ of the last days, turning the religious community into a staunch bastion of opposition against God. Do you still fail to see this fact clearly?

Excerpted from the movie script of Break the Shackles and Run!

Question 5: Upon learning that we had accepted Almighty God, the pastor and elder have been ceaselessly bothering us, explaining the Bible to us nonstop. Though we refute them, and reject them, they do not let up. This is severe harassment of citizens. In the past, when we were weak or negative, they were never so diligent. Now, as soon as we accept Almighty God, however, they have become very angry, using both carrot and stick, endlessly annoying us. It seems that this evil of theirs won't let up until they have dragged us into hell with them! I just don't understand it. The pastor and elder, as persons who serve the Lord, and who often talk of the Bible, they should be able to see that all words expressed by Almighty God are truth. Why do they not seek truth? Why don't they investigate the last-days work of Almighty God, instead of wildly condemning, resisting, and blaspheming Almighty God? The pastor and elder expend such effort to obstruct our acceptance of Almighty God. We really do need to understand. Please fellowship this a bit with us.

Answer: Can the pastor and elder not be worried about your acceptance of Almighty God? In the eyes of the pastor and elder, you are their sheep. You have been stolen away—this strikes the pastor and elder at a vital part. They therefore must do whatever it takes to entangle you, and seize you back. Recall the times during which the Lord Jesus appeared and worked. The chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees of the Jewish religion slandered, condemned, and blasphemed the Lord Jesus in an unbridled way; they even crucified the Lord Jesus. At that time there were certainly many people of the Jewish faith who wanted to accept the Lord Jesus. Why did they not dare to accept the Lord Jesus? And dare even less to follow the Lord Jesus? I think that those Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees

must have frequently threatened the Jewish believers, and even adopted various methods to prevent people from accepting the Lord Jesus. At that time there was a person called Nicodemus. Why could he only go to see the Lord Jesus at night time? It is certainly not unrelated to this situation. These things have been recorded very clearly in the Bible. Unfortunately no more than a few people in religious circles could see into the source of the Pharisees' resistance to the Lord. Even less was there anyone able to discern the pastors and elders of religious circles based on the words the Lord Jesus spoke to condemn, expose, and curse the Pharisees. Is this not the actual situation? Almighty God of the last days has arrived, and has exposed the substance and true situation of the resistance of religious Pharisees, pastors, and elders toward God. Let's read a few passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says: "**Do you wish to know the root of why the Pharisees opposed Jesus? Do you wish to know the essence of the Pharisees? They were full of fantasies about the Messiah. What is more, they believed only that the Messiah would come, yet did not seek the life truth. And so, even today they still await the Messiah, for they have no knowledge of the way of life, and do not know what the way of truth is. How, say you, could such foolish, stubborn and ignorant people gain God's blessing? How could they behold the Messiah? They opposed Jesus because they did not know the direction of the Holy Spirit's work, because they did not know the way of truth spoken by Jesus, and, furthermore, because they did not understand the Messiah. And since they had never seen the Messiah and had never**

been in the company of the Messiah, they made the mistake of clinging in vain to the name of the Messiah while opposing the essence of the Messiah by any means possible. These Pharisees in essence were stubborn, arrogant, and did not obey the truth. The principle of their belief in God was: No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called the Messiah. Are these views not preposterous and ridiculous? I will ask you further: Is it not extremely easy for you to commit the mistakes of the earliest Pharisees, given that you have not the slightest understanding of Jesus? Are you able to discern the way of truth? Can you truly guarantee that you will not oppose Christ? Are you able to follow the work of the Holy Spirit? If you do not know whether you will oppose Christ, then I say that you are already living on the brink of death. Those who did not know the Messiah were all capable of opposing Jesus, of rejecting Jesus, of slandering Him. People who do not understand Jesus are all capable of rejecting Him and reviling Him. Moreover, they are capable of seeing the return of Jesus as the deceit of Satan, and more people shall condemn Jesus returned to flesh. Does not all of this make you afraid? What you face shall be blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, the ruination of the words of the Holy Spirit to the churches, and the spurning of all that is expressed by Jesus. What can you gain from Jesus if you are so befuddled? How can you understand the work of Jesus when He returns to flesh on a white cloud, if you

obstinately refuse to realize your errors? I tell you this: People who do not receive the truth, yet blindly await the arrival of Jesus upon white clouds, will surely blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, and they are the category that shall be destroyed" ("By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God's work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God's will. They are all worthless, vile people, each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of 'sound constitution,' but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls?**" ("All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Every day, they seek traces of Me in the Bible and find 'suitable' passages at random which they read endlessly and recite as scriptures. … They pay no heed to My**

existence or actions, but instead devote extreme and special attention to each and every word of Scripture. Many more even believe that I should not do anything I wish to do unless it is foretold by Scripture. They attach too much importance to Scripture. It can be said that they see words and expressions as too important, to the extent that they use verses from the Bible to measure every word I say and to condemn Me. What they seek is not the way of compatibility with Me or the way of compatibility with the truth, but the way of compatibility with the words of the Bible, and they believe that anything that does not conform to the Bible is, without exception, not My work. Are such people not the dutiful descendants of the Pharisees? The Jewish Pharisees used the law of Moses to condemn Jesus. They did not seek compatibility with the Jesus of that time, but diligently followed the law to the letter, to the extent that—after having charged Him with not following the law of the Old Testament and not being the Messiah—they ultimately nailed the innocent Jesus to the cross. What was their substance? Was it not that they didn't seek the way of compatibility with the truth? They obsessed over each and every word of Scripture while paying heed neither to My will nor to the steps and methods of My work. They were not people who sought the truth, but people who rigidly clung to words; they were not people who believed in God, but people who believed in the Bible. Essentially, they were watchdogs of the Bible" ("You Should Seek the Way of Compatibility With Christ" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Look at the leaders of each denomination—they are all arrogant and self-righteous, and their interpretations of the Bible lack context and are guided by their own imaginings. They all rely on gifts and erudition to do their work. If they could not preach at all, would people follow them? They do, after all, possess some knowledge and can preach on some doctrine, or they know how to win others over and make use of some artifice. They use these to bring people before themselves and deceive them. Nominally, those people believe in God, but in reality, they follow their leaders. When they encounter someone preaching the true way, some of them say, 'We have to consult our leader about our faith.' A human is the medium of their faith in God; is that not a problem? What have those leaders become, then? Have they not become Pharisees, false shepherds, antichrists, and stumbling blocks to people's acceptance of the true way?**" ("Only to Pursue the Truth Is Truly to Believe in God" in Records of Christ's Talks).

Now that we've read the words of Almighty God, is everyone clearer about how the religious Pharisees resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus, how pastors and elders of religious circles resist and condemn God's last-days work, and the facts and source of their resistance toward God? In the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus cursed the Pharisees, and exposed the true visage of the Pharisees as hypocrites. Almighty God of the last days has arrived, and has revealed the God-resisting conduct, behavior, and essence of pastors and elders of religious circles. In God's two incarnations, why does He expose the essence and actuality of the religious leaders'

hypocrisy and resistance of God both times? The reason is that though they wave the banner of serving God, in fact they do not carry out and experience the words of God, and don't abide by God's commandments. For this reason they have no reality of truth, and even less are they people who really submit to God; they only observe a few doctrines, rules, and religious rites. They utilize their own eloquence and gifts, explain biblical knowledge and theology only to call attention to themselves and show off, so that people revere and follow them. This causes God's chosen people to obey them, and consult them in every matter, obeying them in everything. Even investigating and seeking the true way, God's chosen people must get approval from the pastor and elder. Regardless what matter they encounter, rather than emphasizing prayer to God or pursuit of truth, they depend on and look to the pastor and elder for support. What is this problem? Do they ultimately believe in the pastors and elders, or in the Lord Jesus? It really makes a person wonder. The religious Pharisees, pastors, and elders have not actually brought the people before God, rather they have controlled them in their own power. Because many of God's chosen people do not have discernment, they have been deceived by this hypocritical appearance of the religious Pharisees, pastors, and elders. We don't understand truth, and have not a whit of discernment. If God had not come to express truth and expose their essence of hating truth and resisting God, no one would be able to see that they are antichrists who hate truth and wage battle with God over God's chosen people! In this way, God's chosen people have no way to escape their deception and entrapment, have no way to accept God's work and turn toward God to achieve salvation, and are ultimately ruined by

these evil servants and antichrists. Almighty God has thoroughly exposed the essence and source of the resistance of religious Pharisees, pastors, and elders toward God, and torn away their masks and disguises as hypocrites, allowing believers in God to see the facts and truth of their resistance of God while serving Him. Is this not God saving us from the restraint of the religious Pharisees, and from Satan's influence? If God did not work in this way, would believers in God be able to voluntarily return to God's presence? If God had not exposed the truth and facts of the Pharisees resisting God, would believers in God be able to discern the Pharisees? If God had not exposed the truth and facts of religious pastors and elders resisting God during the last days, would believers in God be able to escape their restraint and entrapment? They certainly would not. Hence we say that God working in this way is His compassion for us, and His salvation of us!

In religious houses of worship, most people revere the pastors and elders. They believe that the pastors and elders understand the Bible, and are devout. They are also quite loving to the brothers and sisters, and often explain the Bible to people, working tirelessly. How can they be hypocritical Pharisees, and antichrists? whether or not the pastors and elders of religion are antichrists cannot be told only from how good they are to others superficially, or by how much work they do for the Lord, or how much they suffer. Most crucial is to see how they treat the appearance and work of God, and how they treat the incarnate Christ and the truth that Christ expresses. Only in this way can their true features be clearly seen. It is quite similar to the chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees of the Jewish faith long ago. They were all adept at explaining the scriptures; scripture was even

embroidered on the fringes of their clothes. From the outside, they looked very devout, but when the Lord Jesus appeared and began to work, how did they treat the Lord Jesus? When the Pharisees saw the Lord Jesus heal the sick and cast out demons, exhibiting the authority and power of God, they actually blasphemed the Lord Jesus for using the demon king to cast out demons, and committed the sin of blaspheming the Holy Spirit. Furthermore, the high priest tested the Lord Jesus, asking Him if He was the Christ. When the Lord Jesus said, "I am," they used this as cause to accuse the Lord Jesus of blasphemy. They turned the Lord Jesus over to the Roman government. They would rather release a robber, so long as they could crucify the Lord Jesus. The Jewish chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees all knew that the Lord Jesus spoke words of authority and power, yet they did not seek truth in the slightest, even less did they accept truth. They obstinately clung to scriptural laws and decrees, using the letter of scriptures to condemn the work of God. They paid no heed to how much truth the Lord Jesus expressed, or to how many miracles and wonders He performed. As long as He was not called the Messiah, they madly condemned and resisted Him, dead set on nailing the Lord Jesus to the cross. These facts are sufficient to prove that the nature and substance of the Pharisees was truth-hating, God-hating antichrist devils. In the last days, the Lord Jesus has returned as Almighty God, expressing truth, and doing the work of judging and purifying people. The good sheep and leading sheep of various denominations hear the words of Almighty God, and recognize it as the voice of God, and have turned toward Almighty God. Pastors and elders of religious circles clearly know that the words spoken by Almighty God are all truth, and have authority and

power, but they do not seek truth at all. Rather they garble the Bible and quote it out of context, saying that departing from the Bible amounts to heresy, and that any Lord Jesus who does not descend on a cloud is a fake. They also declare that any message of the coming of God incarnate is heresy and false doctrine. They madly spread various rumors and fallacies that condemn, slander, attack, and blaspheme Almighty God. They obstruct people by hook or by crook from pursuing and investigating God's last-days work, causing God's chosen people to abandon God's arrival. The pastors and elders know that they are God's sheep, yet they do not return them to God. Instead, they called God's sheep their own sheep, intending to control and dominate God's chosen people forever. Is this not the behavior of antichrists? Don't pastors and elders of religious circles act this way? Even more hateful is that as soon as they discover someone is going to a church to spread the news and bear witness for Almighty God, they beat him, abuse and humiliate him, and even call the police. They hand over the ones who bear witness for Almighty God to the satanic CCP regime, vainly hoping to ban God's last-days work with the help of the evil power of the CCP, to fulfill their wicked goal of being forever in control of religion in China. This completely reveals their satanic nature of hating truth and hating God.

Excerpted from the movie script of Stay Out of My Business

Question 6: The CCP is an atheist party, a demonic group that is most hostile to God and the truth. The demon is the personification of Satan. The reincarnation of Satan and evil spirits is demon, the sworn enemy of God. Therefore, when God appears in the flesh and works in China in the last days, the insane suppression and persecution He encounters from the CCP government, it is inevitable. But the majority of the pastors and elders in the religious community are servants of God who are familiar with the Bible. Not only do they not seek and study Almighty God's work in the last days, they judge, condemn and frantically resist instead. This is incredible! It is not surprising that the CCP government condemns God's work. Why do the religious pastors and elders resist and condemn God's work too?

Answer: God has become flesh twice. Twice He encountered the collective resistance, condemnation and persecution of the religious community and the world's governments. This proves that "The true way has been persecuted since ancient times." Many people cannot discern this matter. They particularly feel incredible about the religious leaders' frantic condemnation of God's work. Actually, there is nothing strange about this. Back then, when the Lord Jesus appeared to work, He was first frantically condemned, blasphemed and arrested by the chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees of Judaism. These facts were clearly written in the Bible. Those chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees, were supposed to teach the Bible and serve God. Why did they condemn, persecute, and hunt the incarnate Lord Jesus? Could it be that their belief in God was intended to crucify the Lord Jesus when He came? Absolutely not! Why did they commit such acts against God? Yeah, why did they? Almighty God

has revealed the mystery here. Let's read a few passages of Almighty God's word.

Almighty God says: "**Do you wish to know the root of why the Pharisees opposed Jesus? Do you wish to know the essence of the Pharisees? They were full of fantasies about the Messiah. What is more, they believed only that the Messiah would come, yet did not seek the life truth. And so, even today they still await the Messiah, for they have no knowledge of the way of life, and do not know what the way of truth is. How, say you, could such foolish, stubborn and ignorant people gain God's blessing? How could they behold the Messiah? They opposed Jesus because they did not know the direction of the Holy Spirit's work, because they did not know the way of truth spoken by Jesus, and, furthermore, because they did not understand the Messiah. And since they had never seen the Messiah and had never been in the company of the Messiah, they made the mistake of clinging in vain to the name of the Messiah while opposing the essence of the Messiah by any means possible. These Pharisees in essence were stubborn, arrogant, and did not obey the truth. The principle of their belief in God was: No matter how profound Your preaching, no matter how high Your authority, You are not Christ unless You are called the Messiah. Are these views not preposterous and ridiculous? I will ask you further: Is it not extremely easy for you to commit the mistakes of the earliest Pharisees, given that you have not the slightest understanding of Jesus? Are you able to discern the way of**

truth? Can you truly guarantee that you will not oppose Christ? Are you able to follow the work of the Holy Spirit? If you do not know whether you will oppose Christ, then I say that you are already living on the brink of death. Those who did not know the Messiah were all capable of opposing Jesus, of rejecting Jesus, of slandering Him. People who do not understand Jesus are all capable of rejecting Him and reviling Him. Moreover, they are capable of seeing the return of Jesus as the deceit of Satan, and more people shall condemn Jesus returned to flesh. Does not all of this make you afraid? What you face shall be blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, the ruination of the words of the Holy Spirit to the churches, and the spurning of all that is expressed by Jesus. What can you gain from Jesus if you are so befuddled? How can you understand the work of Jesus when He returns to flesh on a white cloud, if you obstinately refuse to realize your errors? I tell you this: People who do not receive the truth, yet blindly await the arrival of Jesus upon white clouds, will surely blaspheme against the Holy Spirit, and they are the category that shall be destroyed" ("By the Time You Behold the Spiritual Body of Jesus, God Will Have Made Heaven and Earth Anew" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**There are those who read the Bible in grand churches and recite it all day long, yet not one among them understands the purpose of God's work. Not one among them is able to know God; still less can any one among them accord with God's will. They are all worthless, vile**

people, each standing on high to lecture God. They willfully oppose God even as they carry His banner. Claiming faith in God, still they eat the flesh and drink the blood of man. All such people are devils that devour the soul of man, head demons that deliberately get in the way of those trying to step onto the right path, and stumbling blocks impeding those who seek God. They may appear of 'sound constitution,' but how are their followers to know that they are none other than antichrists who lead people to stand against God? How are their followers to know that they are living devils dedicated to the devouring of human souls?" ("All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Look at the leaders of each denomination—they are all arrogant and self-righteous, and their interpretations of the Bible lack context and are guided by their own imaginings. They all rely on gifts and erudition to do their work. If they could not preach at all, would people follow them? They do, after all, possess some knowledge and can preach on some doctrine, or they know how to win others over and make use of some artifice. They use these to bring people before themselves and deceive them. Nominally, those people believe in God, but in reality, they follow their leaders. When they encounter someone preaching the true way, some of them say, 'We have to consult our leader about our faith.' A human is the medium of their faith in God; is that not a problem? What have those leaders become, then? Have they not become Pharisees, false**

shepherds, antichrists, and stumbling blocks to people's acceptance of the true way?" ("Only to Pursue the Truth Is Truly to Believe in God" in Records of Christ's Talks).

"**The reason why man opposes God stems, on the one hand, from his corrupt disposition, and on the other hand, from ignorance of God and lack of understanding of the principles by which God works and of His will for man. These two aspects, taken together, constitute a history of man's resistance to God**" ("All People Who Do Not Know God Are People Who Oppose God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

The words of Almighty God have clearly spoken about the root cause of the Pharisees, religious pastors and elders' resistance to God. The religious pastors and elders only focus on pursuing biblical knowledge and theological theories, but not pursuing the truth. The pastors and elders are weary of and hostile to the truth. When they see the expressions of Almighty God are all the truth, they are filled with hostility, and they begin to judge, condemn and resist God. When the Pharisees of Judaism heard the preaching of the Lord Jesus, they openly acknowledged that His words possessed power and authority, and that they originated from God. So why did they still condemn, arrest and crucify the Lord Jesus? By rights, since they discovered that the words of the Lord Jesus were the truth, they should have prayed to God to seek the answer: Is the Lord Jesus the Messiah? God would certainly have enlightened them. But they neither prayed to God nor sought at all, instead just condemning the Lord Jesus for blasphemy. In particular, they repeatedly asked the Lord Jesus, "Are you the Messiah?" When the Lord Jesus directly answered them, they refused to accept it. This adequately shows that

the Pharisees were too arrogant and worshiped the Bible too much! They looked down on Christ, who was expressing the truth. Their logic was no matter how much truth the Lord Jesus could express, no matter how authoritative and powerful His words were, as long as He was not called Messiah, they would condemn, resist and even nail the Lord Jesus on the cross. Would you say that those leaders of Judaism were truth-hating demons? If the Lord Jesus had not been able to express the truth, would they have had such hatred for Him? This completely exposed the Pharisees' truth-hating satanic nature. This was where the roots of the Pharisees' resistance of the Lord Jesus lay! Just as the Lord Jesus said when He exposed the Pharisees: "**But now you seek to kill Me, a man that has told you the truth, which I have heard of God.... And if I say the truth, why do you not believe Me? He that is of God hears God's words: you therefore hear them not, because you are not of God**" (Jhn 8:40, 46–47). Now we have seen clearly why the Jewish leaders resisted and murdered the Lord Jesus, so the reason the religious pastors and elders in the last days frantically resist and condemn Almighty God is not hard to understand. Those of us who have undergone the work of God have some sort of experience that all those who hate the truth will inevitably judge, condemn and resist God. The judgment work of Almighty God in the last days is to cleanse the satanic disposition of man. He judges and cleanses man by expressing the truth. Those who are able to accept the truth will receive cleansing and salvation. The satanic disposition of those who reject the truth cannot be changed. They will still resist and betray God as always. In The Church of Almighty God, some who were weary of and hostile to the truth were completely exposed—those

unbelievers and antichrists were purged and expelled. As for the religious pastors and elders, why do they insist on condemning and blaspheming Almighty God? Isn't it because Almighty God expresses many truths to conquer and save a group of people? The work of Almighty God has exposed them, which is why they hate and condemn God. Their satanic nature has been utterly exposed. Why does God detest and curse these exposed antichrists? It is because they vie with God over His chosen people by firmly controlling the sheep of God within their own hands, and forbidding people to study and accept the true way. They set up their own little kingdoms and become demons that harm and swallow up human lives. They have been condemned and cursed by God for offending His disposition.

What is the basis of the pastors and elders condemnation of Almighty God? We have to discern this matter. First, they only go by the lack of record of Almighty God's work in the Bible. They only believe that God's word was all written in the Bible and God's word does not exist outside the Bible. So they deny the work of Almighty God. Second, they do not understand how the prophecies of the Bible are fulfilled. Like the Pharisees, they only follow regulation. No matter how profound and authoritative the sermon spoken by the Lord Jesus was, how much truth He has, as long as the Lord was not called the Messiah, they would condemn, resist and even nail the Lord Jesus to the cross. Third, they do not recognize Christ in the flesh, nor do they admit that God will become flesh. "According to the apostle John, they are antichrists." Fourth, they go by the rumors and lies fabricated by the CCP government to deny and condemn the work of Almighty God in the last days. They even take side with the CCP. They can't wait for the CCP to thoroughly ban The Church of

Almighty God. This makes us think, why didn't the Lord Jesus go to the synagogue when He preached and worked? "Why did He look for someone in the wilderness who was after God's heart? If the Lord Jesus had gone to the synagogue, He would surely have been expelled. He would surely have been taken away by the Jewish leaders and surrendered to those in power." If we went to the church to bear witness for Almighty God, what would be the outcome? they will certainly report to the police. The ways religious pastors and elders resist Almighty God are identical to how the Pharisees resisted the Lord Jesus back then. They are the antichrists and evil servants that detest the truth. They are the demons that obstruct us from entering the kingdom of heaven!

Excerpted from the movie script of Perilous Is the Road to the Heavenly Kingdom

IX. Questions and Answers on Why the True Way Is Subject to Persecution

Question 1: In the Bible, Paul says we should obey those in authority. If we put Paul's words into practice, then we should always listen to the ruling regime. But the atheistic CCP is always persecuting religious people and acting as an enemy of God. Not only does the CCP forbid us from believing in the Lord, it also captures and persecutes those who spread God's gospel. If we obey it and do not believe in the Lord or spread His gospel, then aren't we siding with Satan in resistance and betrayal of the Lord? Won't we then become those who are destined to perish? I really don't understand this. When it comes to how we treat the ruling authority, what should we do to ensure we're in accordance with God's will?

Answer: In the Bible, Paul says we should obey the authorities. His words were as follows: "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whoever therefore resists the power, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation" (Rom 13:1–2). Because of Paul's words, many people who believe in the Lord think that the ruling authority has been ordained by God. Thus, obeying the ruling regime is obeying God. Some people even think that no matter how the authorities prevent and restrict people from believing in God, they should be obeyed. They also say that resisting the government is resisting God. Are these views really correct? Are they really in accordance with God's will? Then what should we really think about this matter? Actually, from the Age of Law to the Age of Grace, God never said that man should obey the ruling regimes. Let's just take the Age of Law for example. The Egyptian Pharaoh, the sworn enemy of the Israelites, was a ruler, How did God treat him? He prevented the Israelites

from leaving Egypt, and God sent disasters down on him. If he hadn't let the Israelites go after that, God would have destroyed him. When the Egyptian army was chasing the Israelites, the Red Sea opened up. Then the Egyptian soldiers that chased the Israelites were destroyed; they drowned in the sea. In the Age of Law, all devilish rulers who resisted God were destroyed by Him in the end. Now let's look at the Age of Grace. Why didn't the Lord Jesus go to the synagogue to preach? Why did the Lord Jesus preach in the wilderness and among the common people? Because the ruling regime and the religious leaders were resisting God. They all took the Lord as their enemy. This is why the Lord Jesus could only preach in the wilderness and among the common people. If the Lord Jesus' disciples had obeyed the authorities, could they have continued to follow Him? Could they have still earned His praise? They couldn't have done that either! From this, everyone who truly believes in the Lord should be able to tell how we should treat the CCP in accordance with God's will. If someone has believed in the Lord for so many years, yet still cannot see that the ruling regime is God's enemy, then does that person really understand the Bible? Do they really know the Lord? Many people do not discriminate. They cannot see through this thing. Because they read Paul's words in the Bible, they don't know what to do. Some people even think that obeying the ruling regime is obeying the Lord, and that those who rebel against the government rebel against the ordinance of God, they are just asking for punishment. Isn't this opinion really really wrong? Isn't it a serious misunderstanding and resistance of God? This is a misguided view that deceives and harms people! We all know, the CCP is an atheistic party. The CCP is in power and that means Satan is in power. The

CCP sees God as the enemy. As soon as they see Christ appear and do His work, they will send out the armed forces and never withdraw until the work of Christ is completely eradicated. They'll never stop until they crucify Christ! Ever since the CCP came to power, they've been publicly denying God, condemning and blaspheming God. They have labeled Christianity as heterodoxy and the Bible a heterodox book; they confiscate it and burn it! They have declared religious groups as heterodox organizations and subjected them to oppression and persecution. Especially when it comes to those Christians who believe in the true God, and bear witness to Him, the CCP is always fanatically suppressing, capturing and persecuting them. They carry out inhuman tortures and inflict savage harm. It really is ruthless, unwarranted killing!

The demonic CCP runs counter to right principles and goes against Heaven. Its evil behavior in defiance of God is countless and its sins are many! The facts are enough to demonstrate that the CCP is an evil satanic force, an enemy of God. Why does the CCP hate and persecute those that believe in the true God so much? What is its purpose? It is most afraid that the Chinese people will all start believing in and following God. It's afraid that people will pursue the truth and gain salvation. In that case, no one will be enslaved by or have to serve the CCP anymore. Therefore, the CCP devil uses any means to persecute Christians. It wants to ban God's work and ban religious beliefs; it seeks to turn China into a godless land, so it will secure its place as the dictator of China for thousands of generations. This is enough to demonstrate that the CCP is the evil satanic regime that most hates the truth and hates God. It is a devilish organization that resists God! The CCP's ruling is Satan's ruling.

During these years of the CCP's rule, they have rebelled against God and persecuted His chosen. Haven't they committed a litany of sins? The CCP government uses all kinds of methods to hurt and kill countless Christians! Have they not brought disaster upon countless Christian households? According to these facts, we can confirm that the CCP government is the most evil satanic regime in the world. It is a group of devils that rebel against God. So we reject them and turn our backs on them. Is this not acting in accordance with God's will? Actually, the Lord Jesus revealed this to us long ago. "**This is an evil generation**" (Luk 11:29). "**And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil**" (Jhn 3:19). The Bible also says, "**The whole world lies in wickedness**" (1Jhn 5:19). The Lord Jesus got to the heart of the matter and revealed the true state and source of this world's evil and darkness. All of humanity lives under Satan's influence. There is no space for God or the truth to exist. In the religious communities, no one dares to publicly bear witness to God's incarnation in the church. There definitely aren't any people that will dare testify in the church or in public about the truth that Christ expresses. If anyone in any denomination is found to be testifying about the incarnate Christ, they will be condemned. They will be driven out of the church or maybe even handed over to the government. Isn't this humanity as evil as you can get? Every corner of the earth is filled with the sounds of denying God, denying the truth or condemning Christ. Isn't this because this world has been ruled by those evil satanic forces that resist God? Think back to 2000 years ago, when the Lord Jesus incarnate was born, He was hunted by the Roman government.

When the Lord Jesus preached and did His work, He was crucified on the cross by an alliance of Jewish leaders and Roman officials. When the Lord Jesus' gospel came to China, it was met with fanatical condemnation and resistance by the Chinese government. There is no telling how many missionaries were afflicted or slaughtered. Since the CCP took over, the number of Christians that have been captured or killed is even harder to count. What does this all prove? Why does the CCP hate believers so much? Why have Christians been persecuted so much throughout history? Why are humans always rejecting and condemning the truth? Why can't the will of God be carried out on the earth and throughout the countries of the world? Because Satan is controlling humanity. Because the whole world lies under Satan's domain. Because the earth is ruled by Satan's evil forces and atheistic regimes that resist God! In particular, the CCP regime is a typical representative of Satan's evil forces. That's the reason that humanity is filled with evil and darkness. Isn't this a commonly accepted fact? However, some people still follow Paul's words, "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers." They think that obeying those in authority is obeying God. Then, I ask you: The evil CCP restricts and prevents us from believing in or worshiping God; do we have to obey them too? The CCP captures and persecutes Christians; it forces us to sign declarations of repentance; it forces us to deny God, reject God, and betray God. It even compels Christians to curse God and blaspheme God. Can we obey a regime that engages in those activities? The CCP forbids us from evangelizing and testifying to God, forces us to sell out the Lord and our church, and compels us to serve as their accomplices and running dogs; should we obey them? If we obey the devilish CCP, then aren't we standing

on Satan's side, resisting and betraying God? now let's look at what Paul said, "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers." Can we put these words into practice? Are they in line with truth? Especially Paul said, "Whoever therefore resists the power, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation" (Rom 13:2). Now, looking at Paul's words, it's clear there are problems with them; they are very questionable! Could it be that Paul can't see through the age of evil and darkness? Paul was once arrested and incarcerated for spreading the gospel. According to logic, he should have greater insight into the evil substance of satanic regime than we do. However, those words that Paul said really boggle the mind!

We should all know that God allows Satan to corrupt humanity and rule on earth. This is all part of God's wisdom and planning. The main purpose of God saving humanity is to defeat Satan, and transform those who have been corrupted by Satan into those who obey and worship God. This is the way to totally defeat and humiliate Satan, and eventually seal its fate. Therefore, God allows Satan to rule on earth and corrupt mankind. God wants to let humans discern Satan for themselves; He wants them to see Satan's essence. God wants mankind to hate and forsake Satan, and God never said that man should obey Satan. Furthermore, He definitely never said that rebelling against the satanic regime is asking for punishment. According to Paul's point of view, those saints that were persecuted and hunted by satanic regimes or even martyred for the Lord were asking for it because they rebelled against the ruling authority? Really? The saints did time in prison. Isn't that a beautiful, resounding testimony to the Lord? However, according to Paul's

words, the persecution and slaughter of these saints throughout the ages did not constitute shining testimony to the Lord; they were asking for punishment because they rebelled against those in authority. In the same way, Paul himself was jailed for spreading the gospel. Is that not futile? Then why did Paul use his suffering as testimony when he talked to others? Isn't there an inherent contradiction here? We believe in the Lord, spread and witness the gospel of the Lord, this is a mandate from Heaven. But satanic governments stop at nothing to persecute Christians. They resist the spreading of the gospel and the carrying out of God's will. This fully exposes their devilish substance: They hate the truth and are enemies of God. People are cruelly persecuted by satanic regimes because they adhere to the true way and spread the Lord's gospel. That is what it means to be persecuted for righteousness and is most approved by the Lord. How can we say they're asking for punishment? The Lord Jesus made it very clear when He once stated, "**Blessed are they which are persecuted for righteousness' sake: for theirs is the kingdom of heaven**" (Mat 5:10). Did Paul not know about what the Lord Jesus said? As you can see, Paul's words obviously contradict those of the Lord Jesus! Therefore, what Paul said is not at all in line with what the Lord Jesus said. It does not conform to the truth. We cannot use it to guide our behavior. We were created by God; we belong to God. We should always listen to God's words and obey His authority, no matter what. This is righteous and just!

Excerpted from the movie script of Faith in God

Question 2: The elders and pastors found out you've been witnessing Almighty God to us. They've been going around spreading heresies and lies and condemning Almighty God. They sealed off the church and have started harassing and stopping our brothers and sisters that try to hear your sermons. They see us as the thorns in their eyes, the most hated of all. They're also saying that all those that accept Almighty God will be expelled from the church. The church has clearly split into two factions. Some of the brothers and sisters want to study the true way with us. Others are following the pastors and elders in resisting and condemning the Eastern Lightning. They also treat us as their enemies. Why has the church changed that much in just a few days?

Answer: What we're now experiencing is a spiritual war! Why do I say that? Actually, each time God is incarnated to appear and do His work, the evil forces of Satan will fanatically resist and condemn Him. This naturally leads to a spiritual war. It exposes and divides the religious community. It's just as it was during the Age of Grace. The Lord Jesus' work of redemption stirred the entire Jewish faith. Many people started to follow the Lord Jesus because of what He said and did, but what about the Jewish leaders? When they saw the authority and power of the Lord Jesus' words and work, they became scared, because they knew very clearly that if they permitted the Lord Jesus to preach and do His work like that, all of the believers would follow the Lord Jesus, and the Jewish faith would soon crumble. Therefore, in order to defend Judaism and secure their own positions and meal tickets, they did everything they could to stop believers from accepting the Lord Jesus. Under these circumstances, people who believed in God separated into many different factions.

Some of them hated the truth and resisted and condemned God's work; they became enemies of God. Some of them had no discernment and became passive observers. There were also some people that heard God's voice and were able to study and accept His work. These people are the ones who truly obey the work of God. When the religious community encounters the manifestation and work of God, a spiritual war will inevitably follow. Divisions will naturally occur. The Lord Jesus' words and work back then smashed the prevailing order of Judaism. They exposed and divided Judaism. This is something that should be plain to see for us.

Now everyone already knows that the Lord Jesus has returned, and He is Almighty God incarnate! Almighty God has expressed all truths that can cleanse and save humanity. He has done His work of judgment starting from His house, which sends shock waves through the religious world. Many good sheep and head sheep from all the different denominations have seen that the words of Almighty God are the truth and have power and authority. They all recognize God's voice and have returned to the Almighty God. Now the pastors and elders in the religious community are having a conniption. They are afraid that when believers see Almighty God's words, they will all return to Almighty God. This will cause them to be isolated. Therefore, in order to protect their own positions, meal tickets, and eternal control over the religious world, they joined together to zealously resist and condemn Almighty God; they restrict believers from searching for and studying the true way. This leads to another spiritual war. This completely fulfills the biblical prophecies: "**Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword**" (Mat 10:34). "**I am against the**

shepherds; and I will require my flock at their hand, and cause them to cease from feeding the flock; neither shall the shepherds feed themselves any more; for I will deliver my flock from their mouth, that they may not be meat for them" (Eze 34:10). During this spiritual war, every one of us believers will be confronted with a choice. Those that thirst for the truth and the manifestation of God, have heard the voice of God through their seeking and studying Almighty God's work in the last days, and have become convinced that Almighty God is the Lord Jesus' return, the manifestation of God. They have all broken free from the restrictions and controls of those antichrist forces in the religious community. They have been raptured before God's throne to accept cleansing and salvation and be made perfect. These people are the overcomers that God will make in the last days. Those who follow the religious leaders in rejecting, resisting and condemning Almighty God, are the tares and dogs that God has weeded out in the last days; they are the unbelievers and antichrists. They have already been forsaken by God and fallen into darkness. The appearance and work of Almighty God have brought great famine to the religious world in the last days; everything has been exposed. The wheat and the tares, sheep and goats, wise and foolish virgins, and good and evil servants have been separated and categorized during the spiritual war. From this, we can see the wisdom of God's work and wonder of His deeds.

Now we all understand that ever since Almighty God carried out His judgment work in the last days, He constantly encountered fanatical resistance and brutal persecution from the satanic CCP regime and the pastors and elders in the religious community. There

are not many people among this corrupt human race that really love the truth. There are also not many people in the entire religious world that really yearn for God's appearance. This completely fulfills the Lord Jesus' prophecy: "**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**" (Luk 17:24–25). However, no matter how much the devilish CCP and the evil antichrist forces in the religious community persecute or condemn them, what comes from God shall eventually triumph. This is beyond doubt! Look, in just 20 years, Almighty God's gospel of the last days has spread throughout China. It became common knowledge in this country long ago. The word expressed by Almighty God—The Word Appears in the Flesh—was posted on the Internet long ago. More and more people in every country and every place who hunger for the appearance of God and love the truth are searching online to study Almighty God's work in the last days. Almighty God's words and work are like the lightning flashing from the East to the West. This is the fulfillment of the Lord Jesus' words: "**For as the lightning comes out of the east, and shines even to the west; so shall also the coming of the Son of man be**" (Mat 24:27). This shows us that Almighty God's work is the appearance and work of God in the last days, the work of the second coming of the Lord Jesus! The results of God's appearance and work will only improve, with more and more people accepting Him, spreading His word, and bearing witness to Him. Time and facts will prove all of this. This is just like the Lord Jesus' work. In the beginning, no one acknowledged that it was God's work, but later,

the gospel spread, more and more people started to accept it. By the last days, it had spread to the ends of the earth. Almighty God's work is the same. Now that the words of Almighty God have spread around, more and more people are accepting them and acknowledging that they are the words of God. This is sufficient proof that God's words are almighty and every sentence shall be fulfilled! God's words can accomplish everything!

Let us hear one passage of Almighty God's word: "**Throughout the universe I am doing My work, and in the East, thunderous crashes issue forth endlessly, shaking all nations and denominations. It is My voice that has led all men into the present. I shall cause all men to be conquered by My voice, to fall into this stream, and submit before Me, for I have long since reclaimed My glory from all the earth and issued it forth anew in the East. Who does not long to see My glory? Who does not anxiously await My return? Who does not thirst for My reappearance? Who does not pine for My loveliness? Who would not come to the light? Who would not look upon the richness of Canaan? Who does not long for the return of the Redeemer? Who does not adore the Great Almighty? My voice shall spread throughout the earth; I wish, facing My chosen people, to speak more words to them. Like the mighty thunders that shake the mountains and rivers, I speak My words to the whole universe and to mankind. Hence the words in My mouth have become man's treasure, and all men cherish My words. The lightning flashes from the East all the way to the West. My words are such that man is loath to give**

them up and at the same time finds them unfathomable, but rejoices in them all the more. All men are glad and joyful, celebrating My coming, as if an infant had just been born. By means of My voice, I shall bring all men before Me. Thenceforth, I shall formally enter into the race of men so that they will come to worship Me. With the glory that I radiate and the words in My mouth, I shall make it such that all men come before Me and see that the lightning flashes from the East and that I have also descended unto the 'Mount of Olives' of the East. They will see that I have already long been on earth, no longer as the Son of the Jews but as the Lightning of the East. For I have long since been resurrected, and have departed from mankind's midst, and then reappeared with glory among men. I am He who was worshiped countless ages before now, and I am also the infant forsaken by the Israelites countless ages before now. Moreover, I am the all-glorious Almighty God of the present age! Let all come before My throne and see My glorious countenance, hear My voice, and look upon My deeds. This is the entirety of My will; it is the end and the climax of My plan, as well as the purpose of My management. Let every nation worship Me, every tongue acknowledge Me, every man repose his faith in Me, and every people be subject unto Me!" ("The Seven Thunders Peal—Prophesying That the Gospel of the Kingdom Shall Spread Throughout the Universe" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Anyone who has read Almighty God's words admits that Almighty God's words are the truth, the voice of God. This is enough

to prove that Almighty God is the second coming of the Lord Jesus. Since we believe in the Lord and follow the Lord, we need to accept the return of the Lord Jesus. This is what it means to be a person that follows the Lamb's footsteps. No matter how long people have believed in the Lord, if they do not accept or acknowledge Him when He returns, they will be forsaken by the Lord. The Lord Jesus' return really will reveal people. Only those who listen to the Bridegroom's voice and can accept it are the wise virgins. Only those who attend the Lamb's wedding banquet have the opportunity to obtain God's approval, be cleansed, and enter Christ's kingdom. If people only believe in the Lord Jesus' name, do not accept His return, and do not accept the truth Christ of the last days expresses, how can the Lord Jesus acknowledge them? The Lord Jesus will definitely condemn them and say, "**I never knew you: depart from me, you that work iniquity**" (Mat 7:23). They are just like what the Pharisees were; they believed in the name of Jehovah God only, and did not accept the Lord Jesus incarnate, instead choosing to fanatically resist and condemn the Lord Jesus. Did their belief in God earn His approval? Not only were they not approved of by God, but they were cursed and punished by Him. Therefore, the people that believe in the Lord but only keep His name, they who believe in a vague God in heaven but do not obey God's work in the last days and do not accept the truth expressed by Almighty God, Christ of the last days, they are exactly the same as the Pharisees. They both believe in God in name only. In reality, they resist and betray God. They must all be forsaken by God. The Lord Jesus' return will expose all men. This is something that we should clearly understand!

Excerpted from the movie script of Faith in God

Question 3: Since we started to study the work of Almighty God in the last days, the religious pastors and elders have been condemning Almighty God more frantically, doing all they could to block us from studying the true way. It is no different from how the Jewish Pharisees resisted and condemned the Lord Jesus! I have been pondering, why did God twice appear in the flesh to work and twice encounter the collective condemnation and persecution of the religious community and atheist government? In the last days, Almighty God appears and works merely to express the truth by speaking and working for the cleansing and salvation of mankind. Why are the religious community and the Chinese Communist government so rancorous against Christ that they even mobilize the media corp and armed police forces to condemn, blaspheme, round up and exterminate Christ? When King Herod heard that the King of Jews, that is, the Lord Jesus was born, he ordered for the slaughter of all male infants under the age of two in Bethlehem. He would rather execute thousands of innocent babies than spare Christ. When God came in the flesh for the salvation of mankind, why didn't the religious community and government welcome His arrival but frantically condemned and blasphemed God's appearance and work? Why did they deplete the resources of the whole country to crucify Christ on the cross at any cost? Why is mankind so evil and so rancorously against God?

Answer: This question is so important and only very few in the whole of mankind can understand it thoroughly! Why mankind defies God so wildly has become headline news, and the historical tragedy of the incarnate Christ being nailed to the cross is being played out again; this is a fact. The Lord Jesus said, "**And this is**

the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that does evil hates the light, neither comes to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved" (Jhn 3:19–20). "**If the world hate you, you know that it hated me before it hated you**" (Jhn 15:18). "**This is an evil generation**" (Luk 11:29). And in 1 John 5:19 it says "**the whole world lies in wickedness.**" Mankind's doings and the attitude they take in their approach to Christ are enough to prove that the entire world is completely under Satan's control and in its power. Nowadays, most of us can see clearly that most pastors and elders of the world of religion are people who defy, condemn and deny Christ, and that the world of religion long ago came under the control of these hypocritical Pharisees and antichrists. Therefore, when God incarnate appears and works, the pastors and elders in the world of religion are the first to rise up and condemn and defy Him—this is inevitable. The CCP government is a satanic regime that most hates the truth and defies God, and it has always been arresting and persecuting Christians. When Christ of the last days came to appear and do His work in China, the CCP government unscrupulously and savagely tried to hunt, round up and exterminate Christ, causing ripples throughout the entire world. This fact completely fulfilled the prophecy of the Lord Jesus: "**For as the lightning, that lightens out of the one part under heaven, shines to the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation**" (Luk 17:24–25). God has been incarnated twice amongst man to speak and work, to redeem mankind and save

mankind, both times suffering the united condemnation, blasphemy, hunting, and suppression carried out by religious leaders and the ruling party; this fact is enough to prove that this world is so dark and evil and that mankind has been corrupted so deeply! Mankind has been corrupted and degenerated to a stage where they have become sick of the truth, they hate the truth, they hold evil in high esteem and they set themselves against God, becoming of a kind with Satan and becoming Satan's progeny, simply unable to tolerate the existence of God. The manifestation and work of God incarnate must therefore inevitably suffer persecution and abandonment. As to why mankind defies God, Almighty God has revealed this aspect of the truth, and we will be clear about this once we have read several passages of the words of Almighty God.

Almighty God says: "**It has taken tens of thousands of years of history for mankind to get where it is today, yet the mankind I created in the beginning has long since sunk into degeneracy. Humanity is no longer the humanity I desire, and thus, in My eyes, people no longer deserve the name of mankind. They are, rather, the scum of mankind that Satan has taken captive, the rotten walking corpses that are inhabited by Satan and with which Satan clothes itself. People have no trust in My existence, nor do they welcome My coming**" ("What It Means to Be a Real Person" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**The source of man's opposition and rebelliousness against God is his corruption by Satan. Because of Satan's corruption, man's conscience has grown numb; he is immoral, his thoughts are degenerate, and he has a**

backward mental outlook. Before he was corrupted by Satan, man naturally followed God and obeyed His words after hearing them. He was naturally of sound sense and conscience, and of normal humanity. After being corrupted by Satan, man's original sense, conscience, and humanity grew dull and were impaired by Satan. Thus, he has lost his obedience and love toward God. Man's sense has become aberrant, his disposition has become the same as that of an animal, and his rebelliousness toward God is ever more frequent and grievous. Yet man still neither knows nor recognizes this, and merely opposes and rebels blindly" ("To Have an Unchanged Disposition Is to Be in Enmity to God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Mankind is none other than My enemy. Mankind is the evil one that opposes and disobeys Me. Mankind is none other than the progeny of the evil one accursed by Me. Mankind is none other than the descendant of the archangel that betrayed Me. Mankind is none other than the legacy of the devil who, spurned by Me long ago, has been My irreconcilable enemy ever since**" ("What It Means to Be a Real Person" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Satan corrupts people through the education and influence of national governments and of the famous and great. Their devilish words have become man's life nature. 'Everyone for himself and the devil take the hindmost' is a well-known satanic saying that has been instilled into everyone, and that has become man's life. There are other words of philosophies for living that are also like this.**

Satan uses each nation's fine traditional culture to educate people, causing mankind to fall into and be engulfed by a boundless abyss of destruction, and in the end people are destroyed by God because they serve Satan and resist God" ("How to Know Man's Nature" in Records of Christ's Talks).

"**Born into such a filthy land, man has been severely blighted by society, he has been influenced by feudal ethics, and he has been taught at 'institutes of higher learning.' The backward thinking, corrupt morality, mean view on life, despicable philosophy for living, utterly worthless existence, and depraved lifestyle and customs—all of these things have severely intruded upon man's heart, and severely undermined and attacked his conscience. As a result, man is ever more distant from God, and ever more opposed to Him**" ("To Have an Unchanged Disposition Is to Be in Enmity to God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Since mankind's contrivance of the social sciences, the mind of man has become occupied by science and knowledge. Science and knowledge then have become tools for the ruling of mankind, and there is no longer sufficient room for man to worship God, and no more favorable conditions for the worship of God. The position of God has sunk ever lower in the heart of man. Without God in his heart, man's inner world is dark, hopeless and empty. Subsequently many social scientists, historians, and politicians have come to the fore to express theories of social science, the theory of human evolution, and other theories that contradict the truth that God created man, to**

fill the hearts and minds of mankind. And in this way, those who believe that God created everything have become ever fewer, and those who believe in the theory of evolution have become ever greater in number. More and more people treat the records of the work of God and His words during the age of the Old Testament as myths and legends. In their hearts, people become indifferent to the dignity and greatness of God, to the tenet that God exists and holds dominion over all things. The survival of mankind and the fate of countries and nations are no longer important to them, and man lives in a hollow world concerned only with eating, drinking, and the pursuit of pleasure" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**No one actively seeks out God's footsteps and the appearance of God, and no one is willing to exist in the care and keeping of God. Instead, they wish to rely on the corrosion of Satan, the evil one, in order to adapt to this world, and to the rules of existence that wicked mankind follows. At this point, the heart and spirit of man have become man's tribute to Satan and become Satan's foodstuff. Even more, the human heart and spirit have become a place in which Satan can reside and its fitting playground. Thus does man unknowingly lose his understanding of the principles of being human, and of the value and meaning of human existence. The laws of God and the covenant between God and man gradually fade away in man's heart, and he ceases to seek or pay heed to God. With the passage of time, man no longer understands**

why God created him, nor does he understand the words from the mouth of God and all that comes from God. Man then begins to resist the laws and decrees of God, and his heart and spirit become deadened.... God loses the man that He originally created, and man loses the root of his beginning: This is the sorrow of this human race" ("God Is the Source of Man's Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**For thousands of years this has been the land of filth. It is unbearably dirty, misery abounds, ghosts run rampant everywhere, tricking and deceiving, making groundless accusations,**[1] **being ruthless and vicious, trampling this ghost town and leaving it littered with dead bodies; the stench of decay covers the land and pervades the air, and it is heavily guarded.**[2] **Who can see the world beyond the skies? The devil tightly trusses all of man's body, it puts out both his eyes, and seals his lips firmly shut. The king of devils has rampaged for several thousand years, right up until today, when it still keeps a close watch on the ghost town, as if it were an impenetrable palace of demons; this pack of watchdogs, meanwhile, stare with glaring eyes, deeply fearful that God will catch them unawares and wipe them all out, leaving them without a place of peace and happiness. How could the people of a ghost town such as this ever have seen God? Have they ever enjoyed the dearness and loveliness of God? What appreciation have they of the matters of the human world? Who of them can understand God's eager will? Small wonder, then, that God incarnate remains completely hidden: In a dark society**

such as this, where the demons are merciless and inhumane, how could the king of devils, who kills people without batting an eye, tolerate the existence of a God who is lovely, kind, and also holy? How could it applaud and cheer the arrival of God? These lackeys! They repay kindness with hate, they have long since disdained God, they abuse God, they are savage in the extreme, they have not the slightest regard for God, they plunder and pillage, they have lost all conscience, they go against all conscience, and they tempt the innocent into senselessness. Forefathers of the ancient? Beloved leaders? They all oppose God! Their meddling has left all beneath heaven in a state of darkness and chaos! Religious freedom? The legitimate rights and interests of citizens? They are all tricks for covering up sin! … Why put up such an impenetrable obstacle to the work of God? Why employ various tricks to deceive God's folk? Where is the true freedom and the legitimate rights and interests? Where is the fairness? Where is the comfort? Where is the warmth? Why use deceitful schemes to trick God's people? Why use force to suppress the coming of God? Why not allow God to freely roam upon the earth that He created? Why hound God until He has nowhere to rest His head? Where is the warmth among men? Where is the welcome among people? Why cause such desperate yearning in God? Why make God call out again and again? Why force God to worry for His beloved Son? In this dark society, why do its sorry guard dogs not allow God to freely come and go among the

world which He created?" ("Work and Entry (8)" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God has spoken extensively on the sources and current situation of mankind's corruption. When we read the words of Almighty God, we gain some understanding on issues such as why there is so much darkness and evil in the world, why mankind so fanatically resists God, and what is the truth and substance of mankind's corruption by Satan, right? The evil and darkness of these times serves to prove that mankind's corruption at the hands of Satan is very thorough, so how many people among mankind are there who thirst for God's appearance and welcome His coming? How many are there who love to hear God's word and accept the truth? How many are there who study and seek God's work of the last days? The majority of people not only ignore these things; on the contrary, they listen to the rumors and lies of the satanic CCP government and they work together with Satan's forces to resist and condemn Almighty God. These are facts that everyone clearly understands. Even though there are many people with faith in God, how many are there who can accept the truth, seek out the truth, and truly submit to God? If we recall the time when the Lord Jesus appeared to do His work, all of the Jewish people followed the chief priests, scribes, and Pharisees to resist and condemn the Lord Jesus. In the last days as Almighty God has appeared to do His work, the majority of pastors and elders in the religious world are now resisting and condemning Almighty God; they are even going so far as sealing off their churches and not allowing believers to study the true way. This is sufficient to show that this world at this time is so full of darkness and evil. Mankind are bored of the truth, they hate

the truth, and they have forsaken God and chosen to stand against Him. The root of this darkness and evil of the world is Satan's control of mankind and that the entire world is under the domain of the evil one. Amen! In the last several thousand years, Satan has used atheism, the theory of evolution, and materialism as well as other harmful teachings and fallacies to deceive and corrupt mankind. This has caused mankind to worship and put blind faith in various lies and fallacies of the kings of devils and "great men," who have said things like: "There is no God or Savior"; "Man can fight against heaven and earth and conquer nature"; "One's destiny is in his own hand"; "Everyone for himself and the devil take the hindmost"; "Those with brains rule over those with brawn"; "Money makes the world go round"; "As a small mind makes no gentleman, a real man is not without venom," and so on. Mankind has been deceived and corrupted by these evil teachings and fallacies, which has made them arrogant, deceitful, selfish, greedy and wicked; there is no man who speaks of humanity and morality, no man who speaks of conscience and reason, and no man who can speak of being honest. In the search for fame and status, men fight each other like dogs and they scheme and cheat one another; they even kill one another. For different interests, nations fight nations in unceasing conflict. Is this not the result of Satan's corruption of mankind? These facts show that mankind has been thoroughly corrupted by Satan and that mankind has become the ilk of Satan, the descendants of Satan. Mankind has become an evil force that stands in enmity against God. For this reason, when God twice became flesh to speak and do His work among men, corrupt mankind resisted, condemned, and

abandoned God on both occasions, even going so far as to crucify Him. These are some of the facts behind why mankind resists God.

As everyone knows, the Chinese Communist Party has ruled over China for more than sixty years, madly suppressing and persecuting religious beliefs all the while, designating Christianity and Catholicism as cults, labeling the Bible as a cultist book for incineration and destruction, demolishing churches and crosses everywhere, and wantonly arresting, detaining and imprisoning Christians, causing countless Christians to be displaced and homeless. An untold number of people are restricted in religious beliefs and even deprived of the right to life. Family members of innumerable Christians were dismissed from public service, their children barred from studying in universities, getting employed and even leaving the country. China is virtually an infernal prison where religious freedom is non-existent, even the right to life is restricted. The Chinese Communist Party simply does not allow believers of God to live; it would rather have all of them killed. The CCP's demented suppression and attacks against Eastern Lightning have created a stir world-wide. Many people have no insight as to why they are so frenziedly resisting and opposing God. It is precisely because the incarnate Almighty God has uttered many truths in The Word Appears in the Flesh and it is this book that has shaken every religious denomination. Many who believe in the Lord have heard Almighty God's utterances and affirmed them as the voice of God and as His work have turned toward Him. The constant increase of those who proclaim and bear witness for Almighty God has caused the CCP to panic. The CCP has arrested countless numbers of those who have borne witness to God in their evangelizing, and has

confiscated many a copy of The Word Appears in the Flesh. They research this book day after day, and increasingly feel how very formidable it is. It has the capability to conquer all. No matter how the CCP tries to slander, to judge and discredit Almighty God, they dare not make The Word Appears in the Flesh known to the public. They make not the slightest mention of what Almighty God has uttered. Why are they staying so cool in response to The Word Appears in the Flesh? They fear the whole world will see that God has manifested Himself doing His work in the East, that the Savior of mankind has appeared in the East, and that there lies the hope of mankind. Why does the CCP fear mankind reading The Word Appears in the Flesh? Because this book is the voice of God, it is the utterance of the truth, and it is true light that has appeared in the East! The CCP is the regime of Satan who is the most evil of all and most hateful of the truth. It fears most of all that the truth will come into man's world, that mankind will accept the truth, that God will take power as King to rule man's world, and that the kingdom of Christ will appear on earth. Thus, the CCP so dementedly pursues and hounds Christ, and uses the media networks for propaganda to wantonly frame, falsely charge and discredit The Church of Almighty God. They do not even spare mobilizing the nation's armed police force to overwhelmingly suppress, arrest and persecute God's chosen ones. With nowhere to hide, His chosen ones have been forced into exile because of the CCP's persecution, and the Chinese government under the CCP has stretched out its evil hand into every country abroad and utilizing political, economic and diplomatic means puts pressure on some of them to have those Christians who have escaped abroad extradited back to China in order to torture and persecute

them. Even more detestable is that the CCP also arrests and persecutes the relatives of those Christians who have gone abroad and treats them as hostages with which to threaten The Church of Almighty God. It forces them to get their passports to go abroad and disrupt The Church of Almighty God in every country, and attempts through diplomatic channels to frame and slander The Church of Almighty God, to mislead by rumor, to manipulate public opinion and discredit it. The CCP incites both the governments and people of other countries to oppose and reject The Church of Almighty God, and to extradite the Church's overseas members; its evil aim is to succeed in obstructing, restricting and suppressing the spread of The Church of Almighty God and its gospel work abroad. The CCP is the devil Satan who hates the truth and hates God. The CCP is expert in the cruel abuse of people and the devouring of souls; it is a demon that eats men without spitting out their bones.

Excerpted from the movie script of Perilous Is the Road to the Heavenly Kingdom

Footnotes:

1. "Making groundless accusations" refers to the methods by which the devil harms people.

2. "Heavily guarded" indicates that the methods by which the devil afflicts people are especially vicious, and control people so much that they have no room to move.

X. Questions and Answers on the Way of Eternal Life

Question 1: The Bible is a testimony to God's work, it has been of inestimable benefit to mankind. Through reading the Bible, we come to understand that God is the Creator of all things, we come to see the wondrous and mighty deeds, and omnipotence of God. Since the Bible is a record of God's word and man's testimony to God, then why can one not receive eternal life from reading the Bible? Is there no way of eternal life in the Bible?

Answer: Through reading the Bible we come to understand that God is the Creator of all things and we begin to recognize His wondrous deeds. This is because the Bible is a testimony to the first two stages of God’s work. It is a record of the words and work of God and the testimony of man during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. So, the Bible is very important to our faith. Think about it, if not for the Bible, how would we come to understand the Lord’s word and know the Lord? How else would we witness God’s deeds and begin to develop true faith in God? If we do not read the Bible, how else will we witness the real testimony of all the saints throughout the ages obeying God? So, reading the Bible is essential to the practice of faith, and no believer of the Lord should ever go astray from the Bible. You could say, if we go astray from the Bible, we could not believe in the Lord. This is verified in the experiences of saints throughout the ages. No one dares deny the value and meaning of reading the Bible in the practice of faith. So, saints throughout the ages and believers all view reading the Bible as a very important matter. Some would even go so far as to say that, reading the Bible and prayer are as essential as our two legs are for walking, without either we fail to move forward. But the Lord Jesus has said, “**Search the scriptures; for in them you think you have**

eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And you will not come to me, that you might have life" (Jhn 5:39–40). Some people are confused, they think, given that the Bible is a record of God's word and man's testimony, reading the Bible should give man eternal life! Then why is it that the Lord Jesus said there is no eternal life in the Bible? Actually, this is not such a difficult idea. As long as we understand the inside story and the substance of God's words and work during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace as well as the effect achieved through them, then we'll naturally come to realize why it is that one cannot receive eternal life through the reading of the Bible. First off, we should know that during the Age of Law, Jehovah God was chiefly concerned with promulgating laws, the commandments and ordinances for man to follow. His words were mostly a kind of guide for humanity, which was still in their infancy, to live on earth. These words did not involve changing man's life disposition. So God's words during the Age of Law were all aimed at making people abide by the laws and the commandments. Though these words were truth, they represent the very rudimentary truth. During the Age of Grace, The Lord Jesus' words and work were focused on the work of redemption. The words He issued were about the truth of redemption and taught people that they ought to confess their sins and repent and refrain from sinning and evildoing. These words also taught people the proper way to pray to the Lord and demanded that man must love the Lord with all their heart and soul, love their neighbor as themselves be tolerant and patient, and forgive others seventy times seven times, etc. These are all included in the way of repentance. So, through reading the Bible, we can only understand the work of God during the Age of Law and the Age of

Grace. We come to realize that all things are created by God and learn how to live on earth and how to worship God. We understand what is sin, who are God's blessed and who are cursed by God. We come to know how to confess our sins and repent to God. We learn humility, forbearance and forgiveness, and know we ought to take up the cross to follow the Lord. We see for ourselves the unlimited mercy and compassion of the Lord Jesus, and realize that only by coming before the Lord Jesus in faith will we enjoy His abundant grace and the truth. The words and work of God during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace as recorded in the Bible were the truth spoken by God according to the plan of saving mankind and the needs of mankind at that time. These truths were only capable of causing man to adopt some superficially good behaviors but were completely incapable of resolving the roots of man’s sinfulness, changing man’s life disposition, and allowing man to attain purification, salvation and perfection. Thus, the words issued by the Lord Jesus during the Age of Grace can only be called the way of repentance, but not the way of eternal life. Then what is the way of eternal life? The way of eternal life is the way of truth which allows man to live forever, which is to say, it is the way which allows man to cast off the binds and restraints of his sinful nature, change his life disposition, and allows him to gain the truth as life, thoroughly break free of Satan’s influence and become compatible with Christ. It allows man to know, obey and revere God so as to never again sin to oppose or betray God. Only the way which can achieve this effect may be called the way of eternal life. Man, dies as a result of sin. If man attains the truth as life and resolves all the sin that plagues him, God will bless him with eternal life. So, only by receiving the

salvation of God in the last days can we enjoy the way of eternal life which God grants to humankind.

Excerpted from the movie script of Who Is My Lord

Question 2: We believe, by putting our faith in and following the Lord, we can attain eternal life. The Lord's word backs this up: The Lord Jesus said, "I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believes in me, though he were dead, yet shall he live: And whoever lives and believes in me shall never die" (Jhn 11:25–26). "But whoever drinks of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life" (Jhn 4:14). These passages are the Lord Jesus' promise. The Lord Jesus can grant us eternal life, the way of the Lord Jesus is the way of eternal life. And the Bible says, "He that believes on the Son has everlasting life: and he that believes not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God stays on him" (Jhn 3:36). Is the Lord Jesus not the Son of man, is He not Christ? We could gain the way of eternal life by faith in the Lord. But you testify that Christ of the last days will bring us the way of eternal life. I don't quite understand this, we are all followers of the Lord Jesus Christ. Why is this not enough to attain the way of eternal life? So why do we also have to accept the words and work of Christ of the last days?

Answer: The Lord Jesus is God become flesh, is God's appearance. The Lord Jesus said, "**And whoever lives and believes in me shall never die**" (Jhn 11:26). "**... the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life**" (Jhn 4:14). The Bible says, "**He that believes on the Son has everlasting life**" (Jhn 3:36). These words are all truth, they are all fact! Because the Lord Jesus is God become flesh, He has God's substance and identity. He is Himself the way of everlasting life. All that He says and does is a natural manifestation of the life of God. All that He expresses is truth and

what God has and is. So the Lord Jesus is Himself everlasting life, and can grant the way of eternal life. He can bring the dead back to life. By believing in the Lord Jesus, we believe in the only true God, and thus can receive eternal life. This is without question. The Lord Jesus' resurrection of Lazarus is good proof that the Lord Jesus can grant us the way of eternal life, He has this authority. Then, why is it that the Lord Jesus did not grant the way of eternal life during the Age of Grace? This is because, the Lord Jesus came to be nailed to the cross in order to redeem mankind, not to do the work of purification and salvation as in the last days. The Lord Jesus' work of redemption was only concerned with pardoning man's sins, but it didn't rid man of his satanic nature and disposition. So, by believing in the Lord, we were pardoned for our sins, but our satanic disposition was by no means cleansed. We still sin in spite of ourselves, resist and betray God. Isn't this the truth? We need to be clear on something. The Lord Jesus' redemptive work during the Age of Grace paved the way for the work of judgment in the last days, so, after the Lord Jesus had completed the work of redemption, He promised that He would come again. The Lord Jesus once said, "**I have yet many things to say to you, but you cannot bear them now. However, when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come**" (Jhn 16:12–13). From the words of the Lord Jesus we can see only when the Lord comes again in the last days will He express all truth that purifies and saves man. Here, "**the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth.**" These truths are exactly the truths that Almighty God of the

last days expresses in purifying and saving mankind. They are the words the Holy Spirit says to the churches, and they are the way of eternal life which God has bestowed upon mankind in the last days. This is why the Lord's followers were unable to obtain the way of eternal life in the Age of Grace. The Lord Jesus said, "**And whoever lives and believes in me shall never die.**" And the Bible also says, "**He that believes on the Son has everlasting life.**" But actually, the Lord said this to testify to the fact that He Himself is God's appearance, and only He can grant man eternal life. The Lord Jesus' promise that those who believe in Him would never die is a testimony to God's authority. God is Himself the way of eternal life, God is capable of granting man eternal life. This is not to say that man has received eternal life upon accepting the Lord Jesus' work. Everyone can understand this. Let's think about it: If we could receive eternal life merely by experiencing the Lord Jesus' work in the Age of Grace, then why did the Lord Jesus say He would return? If we only believe in the Lord Jesus but do not accept His return, then are we people who follow the Lamb's footsteps? Are we people who truly believe in God? Will the Lord Jesus acknowledge people like this? Aren't we forsaking and betraying God by doing this? Therefore, in our belief in God, not only do we have to believe in the Lord Jesus Christ and experience the Lord Jesus' words and work in the Age of Grace, but we also have to accept His return and experience the words and work of Christ of the last days. Only then will we truly believe in the Son and will be raised up before God's throne to attend the wedding feast of the Lamb, and only people like this will receive eternal life, and that's a fact.

As we all know, despite the fact that when we accepted the Lord Jesus' redemption in the Age of Grace, our sins were forgiven and we were granted the right to pray to God and enjoy His grace and blessings, it cannot be denied at this time, we are still constrained by our sinful nature, we still live helplessly in sin, we are utterly incapable of practicing the Lord's word and have no real reverence and obedience to God. At this time, we could often still lie and deceive God, we seek after fame and fortune, lust for money and follow the trend of the world. Especially when the work of God is not in line with our notions, we would blame, judge and even resist God. We couldn't even repent truly, so could we attain the Lord's approval? Even though many men are able to follow, testify to, even sacrifice their lives for the Lord, and have truly repented, in reality, have their corrupted dispositions been cleansed? So do they truly know the Lord? Have they actually rid themselves of Satan's influence and been gained by God? Absolutely not, this is a commonly acknowledged fact. This is sufficient to prove that the work of the Lord Jesus during the Age of Grace was merely a work of redemption. It was definitely not the work of salvation and perfection of the last days. The words the Lord Jesus expressed during the Age of Grace merely gave people the way of repentance, not the way of eternal life, so this is why the Lord Jesus said He would come again. The return of the Lord Jesus is to do the work of expressing the truth and bestowing upon man the way of eternal life, so that they may thoroughly wrest themselves from Satan's influence and gain the truth as life to become men who know God, obey God, revere God and become compatible with God, so that they may enter into the kingdom of heaven and gain eternal life. On the foundation

of the Lord Jesus' work of redemption, Almighty God in the last days has commenced the work of judgment starting from God's house and has expressed all truths to purify and save mankind. He has revealed to mankind God's righteous, majestic, and unoffendable disposition, judged and exposed the substance and fact of man's corruption by Satan. He has unearthed the root of man's rebellion and resistance to God, and told man all of God's intentions and requirements. At the same time, He has explained to mankind in clear terms all of the truths which man needs to receive salvation, such as the inside story and the substance of all three stages of God's work of salvation as well as the relationship between these three stages, the difference between the work of God and the work of man, the inside story and truth of the Bible, the mystery of the judgment in the last days, the mystery of the wise virgins being raptured and that of perfecting people into overcomers before the disasters, the mystery of God become flesh, and what it means to truly believe in, obey and love God, how to revere God and shun evil to become compatible with Christ, how to live out a life of meaning, and so on. These truths are the way of eternal life bestowed by God upon mankind in the last days. So, if we wish to gain truth and life, attain salvation, purification and be perfected, then we must accept and obey the words and work of Almighty God, Christ of the last days. This is the only way that we may attain truth and life. Let's have a look at the words of Almighty God.

Almighty God says, "**God Himself is life, and the truth, and His life and truth coexist. Those who are incapable of gaining the truth shall never gain life. Without the guidance, support, and provision of the truth, you shall**

only gain letters, doctrines, and, above all, death. God's life is ever-present, and His truth and life coexist. If you cannot find the source of truth, then you will not gain the nourishment of life; if you cannot gain the provision of life, then you will surely have no truth, and so apart from imaginations and notions, the entirety of your body shall be nothing but your flesh—your stench-ridden flesh. Know that the words of books do not count as life, the records of history cannot be feted as the truth, and the regulations of the past cannot serve as an account of words presently spoken by God. Only that which is expressed by God when He comes to earth and lives among man is the truth, life, God's will, and His current way of working. If you apply the records of words spoken by God during ages past to today, that makes you an archaeologist, and the best way of describing you is as an expert on historical heritage. That is because you always believe in traces of the work that God did in times past, only believe in the shadow of God left from when He previously worked among man, and only believe in the way that God gave to His followers in former times. You do not believe in the direction of God's work today, do not believe in the glorious countenance of God today, and do not believe in the way of truth presently expressed by God. And so you are undeniably a daydreamer who is completely out of touch with reality. If now you still cling to words that are incapable of bringing life to man, then you are a hopeless piece of deadwood,[a]

for you are too conservative, too intractable, too impervious to reason!

.....

Christ of the last days brings life, and brings the enduring and everlasting way of truth. This truth is the path by which man gains life, and it is the only path by which man shall know God and be approved by God. If you do not seek the way of life provided by Christ of the last days, then you shall never gain the approval of Jesus, and shall never be qualified to enter the gate of the kingdom of heaven, for you are both a puppet and prisoner of history. Those who are controlled by regulations, by letters, and shackled by history will never be able to gain life nor gain the perpetual way of life. This is because all they have is turbid water which has been clung to for thousands of years instead of the water of life that flows from the throne. Those who are not supplied with the water of life will forever remain corpses, playthings of Satan, and sons of hell. How, then, can they behold God? If you only try to hold on to the past, only try to keep things as they are by standing still, and do not try to change the status quo and discard history, then will you not always be against God? The steps of God's work are vast and mighty, like surging waves and rolling thunders—yet you sit passively awaiting destruction, clinging to your folly and doing nothing. In this way, how can you be considered someone who follows the footsteps of the Lamb? How can you justify the God that you hold on to as a God who is always new and never old?

And how can the words of your yellowed books carry you across into a new age? How can they lead you to seek the steps of God's work? And how can they take you up to heaven? What you hold in your hands are letters that can provide but temporary solace, not truths that are capable of giving life. The scriptures you read can only enrich your tongue and are not words of wisdom that can help you know human life, much less the paths that can lead you to perfection. Does this discrepancy not give you cause for reflection? Does it not make you realize the mysteries contained within? Are you capable of delivering yourself to heaven to meet God on your own? Without the coming of God, can you take yourself into heaven to enjoy family happiness with God? Are you still dreaming now? I suggest, then, that you stop dreaming and look at who is working now—look to see who is now carrying out the work of saving man during the last days. If you do not, you shall never gain the truth, and shall never gain life.

Those who wish to gain life without relying on the truth spoken by Christ are the most ridiculous people on earth, and those who do not accept the way of life brought by Christ are lost in fantasy. And so I say that those who do not accept Christ of the last days shall forever be despised by God. Christ is man's gateway to the kingdom during the last days, and there are none who can go around Him. None may be perfected by God except through Christ. You believe in God, and so you must accept His words and obey His way. You cannot only think of gaining blessings while

being incapable of receiving the truth and incapable of accepting the provision of life. Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God" ("Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Almighty God, Christ of the last days, has expressed all the truths which will purify and save mankind. These words are abundant, comprehensive and have all the sustenance which God provides. They open our eyes and enrich our knowledge, allowing us to see that Christ is the truth, the way, and the life. Christ is the way of eternal life. The words that God has expressed in the Age of Kingdom go far beyond all that was said during the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. Especially, as in "God's Utterances to the Entire Universe" in The Word Appears in the Flesh, God makes Himself known for the first time to all of humanity. It is also the first time humankind hears the Creator's utterances to all of man. This has sent shockwaves through the entire universe, and opened the eyes of man. This is the work of judgment before the great white throne in the last days. The Age of Kingdom is the age in which God does the work of judgment, and is the age in which God's righteous disposition is made manifest to all mankind. So, in the Age of Kingdom, God expresses His word, judging, purifying and perfecting

man. He sends down all manner of disasters upon man, rewarding the good and punishing the wicked. He reveals God's righteousness, majesty and wrath to mankind. All of the truths that Almighty God expresses to purify, save and perfect man are the way of eternal life God bestows on man in the last days. These truths are the water of the river of life which flows from the throne. So, in our belief in God if we want to gain the way of eternal life, and attain rapture and enter the kingdom of heaven, we must accept the work of judgment of Almighty God, Christ in the last days, as well as the judgment and chastisement of His words. Only this way can we gain the work of the Holy Spirit, understand and gain the truth, achieve purification, and be saved. Only those who undergo Almighty God's judgment and chastisement in the last days are entitled to enter into God's kingdom. This is an absolute fact! If we continue to hold on to our own religious notions, in the end it will be we that suffer a loss. The wise virgins only focus on seeking the truth and listening to God's words, but the foolish virgins only keep to the letters of the Bible and their concepts and imaginations, and do not seek the truth or listen to God's voice. Then one day, they will suddenly fall into disaster and be weeping and gnashing their teeth, and even regret will be useless. So, all those who do not accept Almighty God will fall into disaster and be punished. This is what God has ordained and no one can change it. Particularly those who wildly condemn Almighty God's work in the last days have already been revealed by God to be the antichrists of the last days— those people will suffer eternal punishment and will no longer have the chance to meet God. It is clear that Almighty God's work in the last days is to classify man

according to kind, to determine people's outcomes, and conclude the age.

Excerpted from the movie script of Who Is My Lord

Footnotes:

a. A piece of deadwood: a Chinese idiom, meaning “beyond help.”

XI. Exposing and Refuting the Rumors and Falsehoods of the CCP

Question 1: You have only believed in God for a little more than a decade. You are still a rookie. I have lived the better part of my life and studied religions for decades. I can tell you responsibly, there is no God in this world, and there has never been any Savior. The whole affair of believing in God is too vague. It is completely impractical. We are both knowledgeable people; we should look at matters according to the facts and science. We should believe in scientific theories such as materialism and Darwinism. Why do you have to believe in God? We communists only believe in atheism and the theory of evolution. You need to know that Darwin's theory of evolution is one of the most important scientific theories in the history of science for mankind. According to the theory of evolution, we can be sure that everything was created by the work of nature. Man is the accidental product of nature's biological evolution process. Man had evolved from the ape. This has a sufficient theoretical basis. This shows that man was not created by God. The words written in the Bible are myths and legends that cannot be taken seriously. I advise you to learn more about materialism and Darwinism. These are very practical theories that can resolve doubts. I believe that when you see it clearly, you will have a correct understanding of religious beliefs and come out from the illusory faith. Only by following the CCP will you have a future.

Answer: The CCP is an atheistic party. It naturally believes in materialism and Darwinism. But what is the result? Materialism and Darwinism have been denied and rejected by most people. More and more people are accepting God and returning to God. More and more people believe that God’s word is the truth. Now the world has reached the end of the last days. God's work has come to the final

step. God will show all His deeds, so that people in the last days will see that all things in heaven and on earth were created by God, and God rules over everything. Just as Almighty God says, "**In the vastness of the cosmos and the firmament, countless creatures live and reproduce, follow the cyclical law of life, and adhere to one constant rule. Those who die take with them the stories of the living, and those who are living repeat the same tragic history of those who have perished. And so, mankind cannot help but ask himself: Why do we live? And why do we have to die? Who commands this world? And who created this mankind? Was mankind really created by Mother Nature? Is mankind really in control of his own fate? ... These are the questions mankind has asked ceaselessly for thousands of years. Unfortunately, the more that man has become obsessed with these questions, the more of a thirst he has developed for science. Science offers brief gratification and temporary enjoyment of the flesh, but is far from sufficient to free man from the solitariness, loneliness, and barely-concealed terror and helplessness deep within his soul. Mankind merely uses scientific knowledge that he can see with his naked eye and understand with his brain in order to anesthetize his heart. Yet such scientific knowledge is not enough to stop mankind from exploring mysteries. Mankind simply does not know who the Sovereign of the universe and all things is, much less the beginning and future of mankind. Mankind merely lives, perforce, amidst this law. None can escape it and none can change it, for**

among all things and in the heavens there is but One from everlasting to everlasting who holds sovereignty over everything. He is the One who has never been beheld by man, the One whom mankind has never known, in whose existence mankind has never believed—yet He is the One who blew the breath into mankind's ancestors and gave life to mankind. He is the One who provides and nourishes mankind, allowing him to exist; and He is the One who has guided mankind up to the present day. Moreover, He and He alone is the One mankind depends on for survival. He holds sovereignty over all things and rules all living beings in the universe. He commands the four seasons, and it is He who calls forth wind, frost, snow, and rain. He brings mankind sunshine and ushers in the night. It was He who laid out the heavens and earth, providing man with the mountains, lakes, and rivers and all of the living things within them. His deeds are omnipresent, His power is omnipresent, His wisdom is omnipresent, and His authority is omnipresent. Each of these laws and rules is the embodiment of His deeds, and each one reveals His wisdom and authority. Who can exempt themselves from His sovereignty? And who can discharge themselves from His designs? All things exist beneath His gaze, and moreover, all things live under His sovereignty. His deeds and His power leave mankind with no choice but to acknowledge the fact that He really does exist and holds sovereignty over all things" ("Man Can Only Be Saved Amidst God's Management" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Since the creation of the world, God has done three stages of work. God has expressed many truths in every stage of His work. The whole Bible is the record of God's work in the Age of Law and the Age of Grace. Then Almighty God came and has done judgment work in the last days, expressing all the truths for the cleansing and salvation of mankind, most of which are recorded in the book **The Word Appears in the Flesh**. Although we do not see the spiritual body of God, we can see all the words God expresses in every age when He appears to work. It fulfilled the words of the Bible: "**In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God**" (Jhn 1:1). Since the corruption of mankind by Satan, God has been speaking and working to save mankind. In the Age of Law God worked in Israel and promulgated the law and commandments to guide mankind's life on earth. In the Age of Grace, God became flesh as the Lord Jesus and did redemptive work in Judea. In the last days, Almighty God appears in the flesh and does His work in China. The word of God recorded in the Bible and the word of God expressed in **The Word Appears in the Flesh** in the last days are the fact that God speaks and works in the world to guide and save man. If it were not for God's Spirit, who could speak such powerful and authoritative words? Man cannot see the Spirit of God, but he can hear the word expressed by God's Spirit. This is enough to prove that the Spirit of God has been speaking and working to guide and save mankind. Man can only believe in God according to God's word. When he prays to God with his heart, he can feel the work of the Holy Spirit and the existence of God. You have not believed in God, read the Bible and God's word, or prayed to God, so you cannot feel the existence of God. In the last days, God

became flesh as the Son of man to speak and work among people. All the words expressed by Almighty God are the truth with authority and power that no one can utter. This proves that it is the Spirit of God that speaks, and the Spirit of God that is realized in the flesh to appear and do His work. After reading **The Word Appears in the Flesh** expressed by Almighty God, I could clearly feel that these words originated from God. It was God speaking to mankind. So I accepted Almighty God. After experiencing God's work for more than a decade, I have felt the authority and power of God's word, and experienced the Holy Spirit's enlightenment. I saw the wonderful deeds of God. In my heart, God's authority, power, omnipotence, and dominance are too real! It can be said that all those with a heart and spirit can see the fact of God's true existence and God's dominance over everything from all the things God has created and from all the truths God has expressed. The Lord Jesus said, "**Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away**" (Mat 24:35). Almighty God says, "**Heaven and earth may pass away, but not one letter or one stroke of what I say will ever pass away**" ("Chapter 53" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). From the fact that every prophecy and every word of God are being fulfilled and achieved, it can be seen that only the word of God is the truth. Mankind as a whole must see the omnipotence and dominance of God.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Conversation

Question 2: I haven't seen God, haven't seen how God works and how He dominates the world. It is hard for me to recognize God and accept God. From my study of religious beliefs for so many years, I think that religious belief is merely a spiritual sustenance and a means to fill the spiritual vacuity of mankind. Didn't all those who believed in God finally die? No one saw which person went to heaven or hell. I see all religious beliefs as very vague and unrealistic. With scientific development and human progress, religious beliefs will likely be abandoned and eliminated. We still need to believe in science. Only science is the truth and reality, which no one can deny. Although science has not denied God, it has not witnessed the existence of God either. If science can really determine that there is God and witness that God dominates everything, then we will believe in God too. We communists just believe in science. Only by believing in science and developing science will human societies continue to progress. Science can solve many real problems of human societies. What can believing in God bring to people? Other than some temporary spiritual comfort, what else is it good for? It does not solve any practical problems. So, believing in science is more realistic than believing in God, much more realistic. We have to believe in science.

Answer: Atheism advocates science above all else, even to the point of deeming science the truth and belief. If science were the truth, why had so many scientific theories been refuted and disproved after existing briefly? This shows that science is not the truth at all. Can science solve the most realistic problems of human societies? Can science solve human corruption? Can science solve the darkness and evil of the world? Can science make people know God?

Can science bring happiness and peace to mankind? Now that science has been developed to its peak, what are the consequences? Science has not brought happiness and peace to mankind. Instead, it has brought wars and disasters that threaten to destroy mankind. The ecology has been destroyed. Green food and organic food have disappeared. Isn't it true? With the development of science, human beings increasingly believe in science, deny and resist God, leading to the growing catastrophe of mankind. Just as Almighty God says, "**Since mankind's contrivance of the social sciences, the mind of man has become occupied by science and knowledge. Science and knowledge then have become tools for the ruling of mankind, and there is no longer sufficient room for man to worship God, and no more favorable conditions for the worship of God. The position of God has sunk ever lower in the heart of man. Without God in his heart, man's inner world is dark, hopeless and empty. ... Science, knowledge, freedom, democracy, leisure, comfort: these bring man only a temporary consolation. Even with these things, man will inevitably sin and bemoan the injustices of society. These things cannot restrain man's craving and desire to explore. This is because man was made by God and the senseless sacrifices and explorations of man can only lead to more distress and can only cause man to exist in a constant state of fear, not knowing how to face the future of mankind or how to face the path that lies ahead. Man will even come to fear science and knowledge, and fear even more the feeling of emptiness. ... If the people of a country or a nation are unable to receive the**

salvation and care of God, then such a country or nation will tread the road to ruin, toward darkness, and shall be annihilated by God" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). When man advocates and believes in science, he will naturally deny the truth and deny God. What outcome will it bring? When man believes in science, he will naturally refuse to accept God's work and salvation, and he might even resist God. When man has left God, there is no more room for God in his heart, so man will no longer receive God's blessing. Now that mankind advocates science, advocates evil, and follows worldly trends, resulting in the widening gap between mankind and God. The whole world is becoming more and more dark and evil and increasingly more against God. The increasingly more frequent human struggles and wars have brought a variety of disasters to mankind. President Yuan, do you say science can save mankind from evil and sin? Can science let man escape the catastrophe in the last days? Can science bring mankind to a good destination? These are major issues related to the outcome and destination of mankind that science cannot solve. This is enough to prove that science is not the truth; it cannot save man. Almighty God's expression of the truth in the last days is for the salvation of mankind. If mankind can receive the judgment and cleansing of Almighty God, it can get God's protection amid the catastrophe and survive to be brought into God's kingdom. This is the promise of God. Whether man can believe and accept God's word or not, he will be able to see the fulfillment of God's word after the end of the catastrophe. Then it will be too late for regret.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Conversation

Question 3: I hear that many pastors and elders of the religious community say that who you believe in is a man and not Jesus Christ. Yet you witness that this man is the returned Lord Jesus, that is, Almighty God appearing at work. Do you know that the Communist Party has long condemned Christianity and Catholicism as cults? And you dare to witness that the Lord Jesus has returned, that is Almighty God; aren't you bucking the head wind? How can the Communist Party spare you? The Communist Party even dares to designate Christianity and Catholicism as cults, and the Bible as a cultist book. This is an open fact. Don't you know that? If the CCP dares to condemn and deny the world's orthodox religions, why couldn't it condemn Almighty God's appearance and work? When the CCP could designate the Bible as a cultist book, why would it spare The Word Appears in the Flesh? The public security agencies have confiscated many copies of this book. Many people are studying it. I just don't understand it. Why do you people have to believe in Almighty God? Why insist on witnessing that Almighty God is Christ of the last days? We understand everything about His family background. He is an ordinary person, just like Jesus that Christianity believes in. Jesus, the son of a carpenter, had parents and siblings. He was just an ordinary man. Yet the entire Christendom worships Jesus like God. Almighty God that you people believe in is also a man like Jesus. You insist on saying that He is God, this is quite inexplicable. You endured so much persecution and pain for believing in an ordinary man. Is it worth it? I hear that there are many people who gave up their families and careers to follow Almighty God. I doubt what you can ultimately get from believing in God like this? What is the basis for you to believe that He is God?

Answer: The CCP is an atheist revolutionary party that doesn't even recognize God in heaven. How could it recognize the incarnate God? So it is not surprising that the Communist Party feels so strange about our faith in the incarnate Christ. There are many people in religions who only recognize God in heaven, but not the incarnate Christ. So they are eliminated by the work of God. For thousands of years, God has carried out three stages of work to save mankind, God said a lot of words in every stage of His work. Mankind only came to accept God's work because of God's utterances. To the last days, the gospel of the Lord Jesus has spread to the ends of the earth. Increasingly more people believe in God, at least over two billion all together. Could you not have seen this fact? Churches are seen everywhere in democratic countries. The Christian, Catholic, and Eastern Orthodox churches all believe in the Lord Jesus Christ. You should know about this. The Lord Jesus Christ is the incarnate God. For two thousand years, countless people have followed and witnessed for the Lord Jesus. The Lord Jesus was an ordinary person in semblance. Why do they firmly believe that the Lord Jesus is the Savior, the appearance of God at work? If you want to know what is the appearance of God and what is Christ, you have to read the Bible to see how the Lord Jesus preached and did His work and how the Holy Spirit witnessed for the Lord Jesus. Then you will know why people believe in the Lord Jesus. Incarnation itself is a great mystery. Christ of the last days, Almighty God, who appears and does His work has expressed all the truths for the cleansing and salvation of man and unveiled all the mysteries in the Bible. If you don't believe in God, don't read Almighty God's word, how could you know the mysteries about God? Do you want to understand what

incarnation is? If so, let us communicate about the word of Almighty God to see how Almighty God has spoken.

Almighty God says, "**The 'incarnation' is God's appearance in the flesh; God works among created mankind in the image of the flesh. So for God to be incarnated, He must first be flesh, flesh with normal humanity; this is the most basic prerequisite. In fact, the implication of God's incarnation is that God lives and works in the flesh, that God in His very essence becomes flesh, becomes a man**" ("The Essence of the Flesh Inhabited by God" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**God become flesh is called Christ, and so the Christ that can give people the truth is called God. There is nothing excessive about this, for He possesses the essence of God, and possesses God's disposition, and wisdom in His work, that are unattainable by man. Those who call themselves Christ, yet cannot do the work of God, are frauds. Christ is not merely the manifestation of God on earth, but also the particular flesh assumed by God as He carries out and completes His work among man. This flesh cannot be supplanted by just any man, but is a flesh that can adequately bear God's work on earth, and express the disposition of God, and well represent God, and provide man with life**" ("Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is God incarnate shall possess the**

expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh).

In these passages, Almighty God so clearly revealed the mysteries of incarnation. When we hear the word of God, we immediately understand what incarnation is all about. The truth can only be expressed by the incarnate God for the cleansing and salvation of mankind. Isn't it the appearance and work of God? Are the world's famous and great people able to express the truth? Aside from the incarnate God, no one can express the truth. Therefore the One who can express all the truths for the cleansing and salvation of mankind is naturally Christ and the appearance of God. This is beyond any doubt. Our belief in Almighty God is exactly because Almighty God has expressed all the truths for the cleansing and salvation of mankind, and done the judgment work in the last days. So we believe that He is the practical God incarnate, that is the Lord Jesus who has returned in the flesh in the last days. This is the basis for our belief in Almighty God.

It is not surprising that some pastors and elders of the religious community resist and condemn Almighty God because most people only believe in the God in heaven. Only a few people can accept and know the incarnate God. Two thousand years ago, when the Lord Jesus appeared to work, didn't the chief priests, scribes and the Pharisees of Judaism resist and condemn the Lord Jesus? They even surrendered the Lord Jesus to the Roman government to be nailed on the cross. When God twice appeared in the flesh to work, He has

expressed many truths and done work for the redemption and salvation of mankind. Although most people recognize the existence of God, they do not know about the incarnation of God. For this great mystery of incarnation, they have never been able to fathom. Therefore, each time God appeared to work in the flesh, many people were revealed and eliminated. In the last days, the incarnate Almighty God has judged and revealed people by expressing the truth. Upon hearing the many truths expressed by the incarnate God, those who love the truth heard the voice of God, recognized that it was the appearance and work of God, accepted and obeyed Christ. For those who do not love the truth, although they recognized the authority and power of God's word, they had notions, they even condemned and resisted because the incarnate God appeared to be an ordinary person. Such people were revealed and eliminated as they were those who detested the truth. The people that God works to save are those who love and accept the truth. The people that God reveals and eliminates are those who loathe and hate the truth. This shows the wisdom and omnipotence of God! God's disposition lies in the way of His work. The incarnation of God is indeed a great mystery that is not easy to penetrate! Many people have stumbled over this. This is how I accept and view it.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Conversation

Question 4: Although the One you believe in is Almighty God, what you read is the word of Almighty God, and how you pray is in the name of Almighty God, according to what we know, your Church of Almighty God was founded by a man whom you obey in everything. According to your testimonies, this man is a priest, a person used by God in charge of all administrative matters. I am puzzled by it. Who was the one that founded The Church of Almighty God? How was it begotten? Can you clarify it?

Answer: Since you know the One we believe in is Almighty God, what we read is the word of Almighty God, and how we pray is in the name of Almighty God, why do you say that The Church of Almighty God was created by a man? I do not know what you based your opinion on. The One we believe in is the incarnate Almighty God, not a man. Most of the words spoken by Almighty God are recorded in the book **The Word Appears in the Flesh**. Since you have not read **The Word Appears in the Flesh**, it absolutely cannot be said that you have a real understanding of The Church of Almighty God. From the Chinese Communist government's persistent publicity and rumors that The Church of Almighty God was created by a man, it is enough to prove that the CCP doesn't understand The Church of Almighty God at all. The CCP doesn't even discern how The Church of Almighty God was begotten, but still insists that The Church of Almighty God was created by a man. Isn't it absurd? Don't you think this is preposterous? I ask you then, by whom was Christianity created? By whom was Catholicism created? In fact, Christianity, Catholicism, and the Eastern Orthodox Church were all begotten by the redemptive work of the Lord Jesus. Although the apostles established churches everywhere, it does not

mean that Christianity was created by the apostles. The churches in whatever age were begotten because of the appearance and work of God. The churches in the Age of Grace were begotten because of the Lord Jesus' appearance and work. The churches in the Age of Kingdom were begotten because of Almighty God's appearance and work. Had it not been for God's appearance and work, could the apostles have been able to establish the churches on their own? Those who joined the church were believers of God. They were not believers of the apostles. Therefore, it cannot be said that the churches in whatever age were founded by man. Even when it was the apostles who established the churches, they still needed to be built in the Lord Jesus' name. The apostles could not say that the churches were founded by them. This is a publicly recognized fact! Why can't people of the CCP speak according to the facts? Why distort the facts so blatantly? Isn't it preposterous? Almighty God appeared at work in the last days to express the truth. When Christians of all factions who love the truth heard the voice of God speak and saw God's appearance at work, they all returned to Almighty God and they were brought before the throne of God, thus creating The Church of Almighty God. There are many people who established churches everywhere, but can you say that the establishers of the churches are their creators? The creation of The Church of Almighty God was begotten because of Almighty God's appearance and work. This is the fact that no one can deny.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Conversation

Question 5: The Bible says, “Let every soul be subject to the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whoever therefore resists the power, resists the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation” (Rom 13:1–2). Having believed in the Lord for many years, you should understand the meaning of this statement. The Bible was inspired by God after all. I believe that we believers of the Lord should obey those in office and power. I don’t know how you receive it. It doesn’t work in China if you defy the authorities. The Communist Party is a revolutionary party. If you disobey, it will revoke your life. To believe in the Lord in China, one must accept the Communist Party’s United Front and join the Three-Self Church. There is no other way out! You see, there are many believers of the Lord in the Three-Self Church who are loving and pious also. Can you say that they do not truly believe in the Lord? Those of you who believe in Almighty God insist on spreading the gospel and witnessing for God regardless of how the Communist Party persecutes and arrests you. Even when you are kept in prison, you still stand up to witness for the Lord and refuse to be Judas. Honestly speaking, this is what I admire about you. Conversely, talking about what we seek in our belief in the Lord, isn’t it all about our desire for a harmonious family and a peaceful life? Look at how prudent we people of the Three-Self Church are. We are a patriotic and church-loving organization that glorifies God and benefits the people. We neither offend the ruling authorities nor betray the Bible. We can openly worship the Lord in church without having to hide in fear. Isn't this the best of both worlds?

Answer: It seems that you have a unique interpretation of Paul's word, which is different from what we receive. Ever since I believed in the Lord, I have experienced the Chinese Communist government's coercion and persecution, I have been unable to understand Paul's words "Let every soul be subject to the higher powers." I feel Paul's words cannot represent what the Lord Jesus meant because the Lord Jesus had never said anything about "be subject to the higher powers." Nor did the Holy Spirit. I feel that believing in the Lord should mean obeying the Lord's word. The word of man should not be treated as the truth and as the word of God. It was after years of praying and seeking, I finally see that the CCP is an evil group that resists God. If one obeys the CCP, he is betraying God. We all know that the CCP is an atheist party that has been openly denying and resisting God since its rise to power. It designates Christianity and Catholicism as cults, the Bible as a cultist book of which countless copies have been confiscated and burnt, and even wantonly arrests and persecutes Christians. Countless Christians were beaten to cripples or death, and countless families were shattered. The CCP even pursues overseas, using economic incentives, political pressure and other means to extradite Christians who have fled to various countries. The CCP's iniquitous resistance to God and victimization of Christians are so numerous that it is outrageous! Tell me, can God allow His chosen people to obey such a perverse and sacrilegious evil regime of Satan that is blatantly against God? If we obey the CCP, aren't we standing on the side of Satan? Since the CCP insanely resists, imprecates and profanes God, and tries to stop us from believing in God, it is the enemy of God. If we obey the CCP, aren't we resisting and betraying God? Many

Christians of past generations were persecuted and martyred for following and witnessing the Lord. Did they obey those in office and in power? Could their martyrdom have been self-invoked punishment for resisting the ruling power? Would Paul have dared to condemn the martyrs of the Lord? I think Paul would not. Then what was the basis of Paul's word? Could it be that Paul did not discern that most of those in power and office were demons who resisted God? That's why I have doubts about Paul's word. I even question Paul's word that "All scripture is given by inspiration of God" because neither the Lord Jesus nor the Holy Spirit had so witnessed about the Bible. It makes me suspect that many of Paul's words originated from man's intention. Hence I would not accept them as the truth. When I believe in God, I only obey the word of God and choose the way I should follow according to His word. As for the words of man, including those of the apostles, I would only use them as reference, even if they were written in the Bible. I would accept and obey them only if they are consistent with God's word and the truth. Otherwise, I would not accept them. This is my point of view.

It is quite dangerous and difficult indeed for us to believe in the Lord in China. However, if we went by Paul's word to obey the satanic CCP regime and take the Three-Self Patriotic path, would we receive the praises of the Lord despite our physical safety? Would it guarantee us to be brought into kingdom of heaven when the Lord returns? I don't think it's possible. The Lord Jesus said, "**Enter you in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leads to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leads to life, and few there be that find it**" (Mat

7:13–14). "**You shall indeed drink of the cup that I drink of; and with the baptism that I am baptized with shall you be baptized**" (Mak 10:39). "**And he that takes not his cross, and follows after me, is not worthy of me. He that finds his life shall lose it: and he that loses his life for my sake shall find it**" (Mat 10:38–39). The words of the Lord clearly tell us that we should enter at the strait gate and narrow way that lead to eternal life. The Lord also said, "**And he that takes not his cross, and follows after me, is not worthy of me**" (Mat 10:38). If we go by Paul's word and obey the ruling authorities, is that entering at the strait gate and taking the narrow way? Is that bearing the cross in following the Lord? When believing in the Lord, if we all obey those in power and office under the reign of the CCP, the devil Satan, aren't we becoming people who resist and betray God? Then who will be left to spread the gospel, witness for the Lord and follow the will of God? Can we receive the praises of the Lord, reach good destination and outcome, by believing in the Lord like this? The Three-Self Church is a vase of religious belief fabricated by the Chinese Communist Party that is completely controlled by the Chinese Communist government. It doesn't speak about the pure truth in the Bible, doesn't speak about loving and obeying God. It only speaks about patriotic love organization, enriching one's family and making a fortune, glorifying God and benefiting the people. This is enough to prove that the Three-Self Church is actually a false church that has been reduced to an accomplice of the CCP that suppresses underground house churches and dedicated to monitoring house church activities. They even join hands with the Chinese Communist government to arrest and persecute the brothers and sisters who

spread the gospel to witness for God. Isn't this Satan's instrument of politico-religious alliance? Pastor Feng, I would like to ask: When people of the Three-Self Church obey the Chinese Communist government, are they actually obeying God or Satan? Will God commend the captives and puppets that capitulate to Satan? Can God admit into the heavenly kingdom those recreants who drag out an ignoble existence under Satan's domain? Now the Lord Jesus has returned. He is the incarnate Almighty God who expresses the truth to perform judgment work in the last days for the cleansing, salvation and perfection of man in order to bring man into God's kingdom. Amidst God's appearance and work of the last days, all believers are faced with a major test in which they will be revealed by their own class, just as the Lord Jesus had prophesied: "**But as the days of Noe were, so shall also the coming of the Son of man be. ... Then shall two be in the field; the one shall be taken, and the other left. Two women shall be grinding at the mill; the one shall be taken, and the other left**" (Mat 24:37, 40–41). Almighty God's appearance and work have revealed all people by their types. The tares and wheat, the good servants and evil servants, those who love the truth and those who hate the truth, have all been revealed by God's work in the last days. It is time now to determine the outcome and destination of man. If man drags out an ignoble existence in fear of the CCP satanic regime's coercion and persecution without courage to accept Almighty God's work in the last days, what will be the outcome? Can this kind of men receive the Lord's praises?

Excerpted from the movie script of The Conversation

Question 6: How do you explain the May 28 Zhaoyuan case of Shandong that has shocked the country and the world? This case was heard in open court after all! After the occurrence of the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong, the government has stepped up its crackdown on house churches, even using the armed police forces to crack down on The Church of Almighty God by conducting overwhelming carpet search-and-arrest of The Church of Almighty God members. Although people have raised numerous doubts about the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong, believing it was a false case fabricated by the CCP to generate public opinions to support its crackdown on The Church of Almighty God, the Chinese media have publicly reported the case regardless of whether the facts are true or false. This has generated some impacts in various countries in the world. No matter how you deny the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong, many people still believe the Communist Party. So I want to hear what you think of the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong.

Answer: How long can the CCP fool the world with this Zhaoyuan case of Shandong that it has singlehandedly concocted? Can it save the CCP's inevitable fate of demise? The Zhaoyuan case of Shandong had considerable impacts domestically and internationally at that time. It also deceived a lot of ignorant people. But can dark clouds permanently block the sun? Can a crow's wings block the sun's glory? Concealment and deception are impermanent. Lies are always lies, they will never become the truth. For so many years, the CCP has become increasingly notorious, corrupt and evil for its deceits and frauds. The CCP is infamous at home and abroad. Can frauds and deceits alone save the CCP? More and more people in the world as a whole see through the essence of the CCP. No one believes

in it anymore. Since the CCP is a notorious atheist party and satanic evil group that is most sinister and resistant to God in the world, the CCP's courts are Satan's courts. Can there be any fairness and justice in the cases adjudicated by these courts? The CCP is a one-party dictatorship and one-party tyranny. There is no independent judiciary in China. CCP judges have no autonomy. They all take orders from the Chinese government and handle cases according to the government's intentions. This is a well-established fact. The cases tried by the CCP courts are bound to be utterly absurd distortion of facts and inversion of black-and-white. During engaging in political struggles and political rule for so many years, the CCP has consistently relied on framing to generate public opinions. It is most adept in this art! When the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong was tried in the CCP court, the defendants clearly stated in court, "I never had contact with The Church of Almighty God." "What the state cracks down on is the 'Almighty God' that Zhao Weishan believes in, not the 'Almighty God' that we believe in." Even the defendants themselves did not admit that they belonged to The Church of Almighty God, and the Church did not know them. Why didn't the CCP judge go by the facts? In the absence of evidence, why did the judge insist on attributing these suspects to The Church of Almighty God? Wasn't this the plot of a frame-up? Wasn't this falsification and deception? Now no one believes the reports of the CCP media and the CCP's lies anymore. You have worked in the Communist system for so many years, you certainly see these things better than I do. Every time before violently suppressing religious beliefs, democratic rights movements, ethnic protests, etc., the CCP fabricates a false case and wantonly creates public opinions to incite the mass, followed by a

bloody crackdown. Take the June Fourth student movement, that started out advocating integrity against corruption, democracy and freedom. Then the CCP instructed some unidentified people to act as students and infiltrate the group to fight, smash, burn, overturn military vehicles, and create chaos. This branded the student movement as "counter-revolutionary," intent on inciting riots, and gave the CCP the excuse they needed to repress the group. The CCP then launched a bloody crackdown on these students. At least a few thousand students were shot and rolled over by tanks. This was how the CCP staged the bloody Tiananmen Incident that chilled the Chinese people and shocked the world! It's also how the CCP suppressed the mass protests in Tibet. The CCP government inserted people in the protesting crowd to deliberately commit arson, killing, robbery and looting. It then mobilized the army to massacre the protesting crowds under the pretext of quelling the Tibetan insurrection. These facts are enough to prove that starting by making up lies, distorting facts and framing, followed by violent suppression are the CCP's usual means to eradicate dissension. The Zhaoyuan case in Shandong formed the basis for the public sentiment that allowed the CCP's brutal suppression and persecution of The Church of Almighty God. It is another major crime of religious persecution by the CCP. You are an official within the CCP system, you should know better than us about the modus operandi of the CCP!

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-education at Home

Question 7: The CCP is a revolutionary party. What it believes in is mendacity and violence, that is, seizing power with violence! Going by the CCP's logic, "A lie will become the truth if it's repeated ten thousand times." No matter how many people doubt its word, deny and disbelieve it, the CCP doesn't care a whit, and it continues to lie and deceive just the same. As long as the immediate effects and its goals can be achieved, it doesn't care about the costs! If people rebel against it and march in protest, it will use tanks and machine guns to solve it all. When necessary, it will use the atomic bombs and missiles to counter hostile forces. The CCP can resort to any means to maintain its rule. As soon as the Zhaoyuan case of Shandong was publicly announced, the CCP started massive deployment of armed police units to suppress and arrest Christians at all costs. Who could stop it? Who dared to resist? Even when foreigners were able to see through the CCP's fraud, what could they do? The CCP has many ways to counter the condemnation of Western democratic forces. It uses money to settle everything. As the saying goes, "Who receives a gift sells his liberty." Fewer and fewer countries are condemning the CCP now. Hostile forces to the CCP are afraid to sound off. No matter how you put it, the CCP is still able to uphold its rule. As long as the Communist Party holds on to power, you believers of God can never expect to be free! God's appearance and work in China will definitely be detested and banned by the CCP. Whether the CCP can achieve the goal of establishing an atheistic domain in China or not, it will never stop arresting and suppressing you! I saw this clearly long ago. That's why I vigorously oppose your believing in Almighty God. It is all for your sake, don't you understand?

Answer: The CCP is so evil, yet it still thrives in the world and no one dares to block it. Could it mean that it can permanently maintain its rule? When the Lord Jesus appeared to work, the Roman regime tried its utmost to resist and condemn Him. Such robust government, wasn't it finally destroyed by the plague cast down by God? No matter what kind of forces in the world, as long as they resist God and act against God, they will be destroyed by God without exception. We cannot advocate status and power, let alone evil power because God rules everything. Whoever resists God will inevitably perish! Although we have seen the utter wickedness of the CCP, we are not necessarily able to see its devilish nature. Why does the CCP so insanely resist and condemn God and harm God's chosen people? The Lord Jesus said in the Bible long ago: "**This is an evil generation**" (Luk 11:29). "**And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. For every one that does evil hates the light, neither comes to the light, lest his deeds should be reproved**" (Jhn 3:19–20). The Bible also says, "**The whole world lies in wickedness**" (1Jn 5:19). Why does the CCP so madly resist and condemn The Church of Almighty God? The main reason is that the CCP is most fearful of the Chinese people's acceptance and return to Almighty God. The CCP is most fearful of the people of all countries accepting the work of Almighty God in the last days. The CCP is most fearful of all the truths expressed by Almighty God being proclaimed and expanded in the world, and the will of God fulfilled universally on earth. This is enough to prove that the CCP is most fearful of the truth and the appearance and work of God, it is most fearful of the true light

appearing to illuminate mankind in darkness, because the CCP is well aware that once the word of Almighty God is proclaimed, there will surely be many to accept the work of Almighty God in the last days. That's why the CCP so insanely suppresses and persecutes all those who follow Almighty God. The CCP so perversely acts against Heaven, it's the enemy of God, the truth and justice! You have been defending the CCP, standing on its side to resist God and persecute God's chosen people. It is a heinous sin that offends God's disposition! It is destined to be punished! All those who resist and act against God are doomed to be destroyed and go to hell!

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-Education At Home

Question 8: What you said about going to hell for resisting God, I don't believe it. Who has seen where hell is? What does hell look like? I don't even know if God exists at all. I don't recognize that God exists. Where is God after all? Who has seen God? If Almighty God is the true God, when the CCP so desperately condemns and attacks Almighty God, why hasn't God annihilated it? If God reveals His omnipotence and destroys the Communist Party, then He is the true God. That way, mankind as a whole must acknowledge that Almighty God is the true God, even the CCP will have to prostrate and worship the true God. Who would dare to resist God? But what actually happened? What I saw was the CCP police arresting believers of God everywhere. Many of God's believers were thrown into prison, tortured and maimed. Many of them were killed. However, did your God save them? How can this make one believe that the God you believe in is true? I cannot understand you at all. Is the God you believe in true or false? I am afraid that you don't even know. In that case, aren't you being foolish? What is your basis in saying that the God you believe in is the true God? Can you explain it clearly?

Answer: You are an experienced person. About God's existence and dominance, do you really know nothing? Since the creation of the world, God has done three stages of work for the salvation of mankind that has been corrupted by Satan. The work in the Age of Law and the Age of Grace was done in Israel and Judah. In those two stages of God's work, many of His words were expressed through prophets and written in the Holy Bible. All the truths expressed by the incarnate God in the last days for the cleansing and salvation of mankind were recorded in **The Word Appears in the Flesh**. In the three stages of work, God twice became flesh to perform

salvation work for mankind. The first time, God had become flesh as the Lord Jesus who was crucified for completing the work of redemption. It sensationalized the entire world. The gospel of the Lord Jesus has spread to the ends of the earth, reached every home and become a household name. Christianity has established churches in all countries and areas. So many people believe in Christianity! In the last days, God has become flesh, who is Almighty God, and done judgment work. It also sensationalized the entire world. **The Word Appears in the Flesh** expressed by Almighty God is proclaimed and attested to humanity as a whole. All who love the truth and seek God's appearance and work heard the voice of God by reading the Bible and **The Word Appears in the Flesh**. Seeing the appearance and work of God, they determined the existence and dominance of God. Since you don't know if God exists, why don't you seek and study God's work? Having lived a lifetime, even many unbelievers can conclude such words of wisdom like "Man's destiny is determined by Heaven" and "When man acts, Heaven observes" and "Man proposes, God disposes." Anyone with a conscience acknowledges retribution. Although man could not see God, he was able to sum up these words of wisdom. He was able to completely affirm the existence and domination of God. Those who only look for money and keep money in their hearts do not seek to study the appearance and work of God. They only see money, fame and profits in their eyes. They view status and power above all else. It is said in the Bible that only fools would say there is no God.

Although you are a CCP member, an atheist, don't you believe in the will of Heaven? Don't you acknowledge that the fate of a person determines his life? Don't you acknowledge the fact that "What goes

around comes around”? This is enough to prove that God rules the world and mankind. From ancient times to the present, nations or races that had resisted God invariably ended up in ruination. It is too easy for God to annihilate a nation or a race. Recalling when the Lord Jesus was at work, Judaism’s leaders joined hands with the Roman government and crucified the Lord Jesus. Seventy years after the Lord, the nation of Israel was punished by God. After Israel ceased to exist, many Jews were killed. There was also the Roman regime that had resisted God and cruelly persecuted Christians for three hundred years. Finally, retributions befell the Roman Empire. It was destroyed by God. From these historical facts we can see that those who resisted God brought destruction to themselves. They were bound to be punished and destroyed by God. Since it took power, the CCP has been frantically arresting and slaughtering Christians. In particular, the appearance of Christ of the last days, Almighty God, at work in China has encountered even more lunatic condemnation and resistance by the CCP government. The CCP launched an overwhelming and all-out suppression against The Church of Almighty God, insanely hunting for Christ and brutally persecuting God's chosen people. It even fabricated all kinds of rumors to malign The Church of Almighty God as an attempt to incite and delude people to deny and alienate God, ruining the chance for mankind to receive salvation and dragging people to hell for punishment. The CCP’s countless acts of resistance to God and evil deeds have long infuriated God's disposition. At the conclusion of God’s judgment work in the last days, God will send down various disasters to destroy all the evil forces of Satan, and destroy the CCP, a satanic regime that is most resistant to God, to demonstrate God’s righteous and

inviolable disposition. Almighty God says, "**Wherever the incarnation appears is a place from which the enemy is exterminated. China will be the first to be annihilated; it will be laid to waste by the hand of God. God will give absolutely no quarter there**" ("Chapter 10" of Interpretations of the Mysteries of God's Words to the Entire Universe in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**He who defies the work of God shall be sent to hell; any country that defies the work of God shall be destroyed; any nation that rises up to oppose the work of God shall be wiped from this earth and shall cease to exist**" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Each of God's words will be fulfilled. The CCP has resisted God, harmed so many people who believe in God, and committed so much evil to bring such immense calamities to the Chinese people. How can it not be imprecated and annihilated by God? Yeah, how can it not be? Look at the increasingly frequent and intense disasters in China, these are retributions for resisting God. Father, don't follow the CCP to resist God anymore. As the saying goes, "The culmination of injustice is perdition." When the catastrophe descends and the CCP is destroyed, it will be too late for you to regret it. Almighty God says, "**My mercy is expressed toward those who love Me and deny themselves. The punishment visited upon the wicked, meanwhile, is precisely proof of My righteous disposition and, even more, testimony to My wrath. When disaster comes, all who oppose Me will weep as they fall victim to famine and plague**" ("Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**If mankind wishes to have a**

good fate, if a country wishes to have a good fate, then man must bow down to God in worship, repent and confess before God, or else the fate and destination of man will be an unavoidable catastrophe" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). The word of Almighty God is very clear. Only by believing in God and worshiping God can mankind receive God's care and protection, and survive the great catastrophe!

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-education At Home

Question 9: I see the government's documents say, like some people who believe in Jesus, those who believe in Almighty God abandon their families in order to preach the gospel. Some people don't even get married for a lifetime. The documents also say that the government wants to detain a group of people who believe in Almighty God and kill another group. Killing them means nothing. There is something else like "Troops won't be withdrawn …" right, "until the ban is done." Many believers of Almighty God were arrested, imprisoned, wounded and crippled by the CCP. Some people even lost their jobs and their families were ruined. This has drawn a lot of criticism that people who believe in God do not want their families. Do you say this is true? You can't abandon your family or give up marriage. If this is how you really believe in God, advises you not to believe in Almighty God, okay?

Answer: If you really knew that God's appearance and work is for the salvation of man, you would believe in God and follow God too. The Lord Jesus said, "**Truly I say to you, There is no man that has left house, or parents, or brothers, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's sake, Who shall not receive manifold more in this present time, and in the world to come life everlasting**" (Luk 18:29–30). He also said: "**And he that takes not his cross, and follows after me, is not worthy of me. He that finds his life shall lose it: and he that loses his life for my sake shall find it**" (Mat 10:38–39). If you see these words of the Lord Jesus, you will know what kind of people are true believers of the Lord Jesus. It is exactly these kind of the Lord's followers that the CCP hates most. Do you know why they follow the Lord this way? They follow the Lord this way for the truth,

for the life, and for the Lord. They can give up worldly glory and wealth, they do not covet physical comfort and carnal pleasure, they are willing to endure hardships in preaching the gospel and suffer all kinds of pains to bear witness for the Lord. What noble people they are! All such people are praised by the Lord. However, why does the CCP so hate, defame and condemn these people? Why are these people being detained and put to death? It even threatens, “Troops won’t be withdrawn until the ban is done.” Isn’t this a perverse act against Heaven? Isn’t this resistant to God? In my opinion, all that the CCP has done to these people who believe in God is criminal and sinful. It is really utmost reactionary!

Those who believe in God preach the gospel to bear witness for God in order for people to come and worship God, and be saved by God. You also see that the world is becoming increasingly dark and evil. People are becoming increasingly corrupt. They advocate evil and abhor the truth. They all follow the world’s evil trends, pursue wining, dining and gaming, enjoy sinful pleasure, and even openly deny, resist and act against God. Say, this world is so evil and people are utmostly corrupted, should they have been destroyed long ago? The Bible prophesies a catastrophe in the last days. If humanity does not return to Almighty God, does not accept the cleansing and salvation of Almighty God, it will be destroyed by catastrophe. Now the catastrophe is imminent, and mankind is facing the calamity of destruction. The incarnate Almighty God has expressed the truth in the last days and taken a step in His work to judge and cleanse mankind for it to be saved from sin and be brought into God’s kingdom. If mankind wants to be saved, there is only one way now. That is to accept the judgment and chastisement of Almighty God for

the cleansing of its corrupt disposition in order to survive the catastrophe with the protection of God. Those who believe in Almighty God understand God's eagerness to save man. They are willing to put down physical enjoyment, brave the arrest and persecution by the CCP, and endeavor to preach and witness the kingdom gospel of Almighty God. This is done to enable more people to survive through God's salvation. This is carrying out the will of God! As the Lord Jesus said, "**Go you into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature**" (Mak 16:15). Almighty God says, "**As members of the human race and devout Christians, it is the responsibility and obligation of us all to offer up our minds and bodies for the fulfillment of God's commission, for our entire being came from God, and it exists thanks to the sovereignty of God. If our minds and bodies are not for God's commission and not for the righteous cause of mankind, then our souls will be unworthy of those who were martyred for God's commission, and much more unworthy of God, who has provided us with everything**" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Do you think people who believe in Almighty God are fools who do not perceive the danger in spreading the gospel? If you think so, then you are wrong. Spreading the gospel is conforming to the wills of Heaven and the people. It is a moral and virtuous deed! However, the CCP government betrayed the wills of Heaven and the people by madly condemning the benevolence of Christians and by brutal arrest and persecution. Many Christians were displaced and rendered homeless. So many people were arrested and imprisoned and some were even

persecuted to death! The CCP government is the culprit behind the ruination of countless Christian families. But it counterclaimed that the families of these people were ruined by their belief in God. Isn't this a distortion of the facts and turning black-and-white on its head? Had it not been for the CCP's lunatic suppression, arrest and torture of Christians, would it have led to such an outcome? Isn't this the sin committed by the CCP through its persecution of Christians? Believing in God is totally justified. Myriad people in countries around the world believe in God. Whose families have been shattered? Isn't it all true? Some ignorant people are still deluded by the CCP's rumors and absurdity. Not only do they not despise the CCP for persecuting Christians, instead they say the Christians are wrong for believing in God. Isn't it mindless and preposterous?

We also know that there is a danger of being arrested for preaching the gospel in China. But if we wait until the CCP collapses and then preach the gospel, everything will be too late. By then the work of God will have been done, and the catastrophe will have descended. Those who have not received the salvation of God in the last days will be destroyed in the catastrophe, and their souls will be cast down to hell for punishment! Almighty God says, "**The disaster originates with Me and is of course orchestrated by Me. If you cannot appear as good in My eyes, then you will not escape suffering the disaster**" ("Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**No one knows that the reason for God's repeated reminders and exhortations is because He has prepared in His hands a calamity like never before, one that will be unbearable to the flesh and soul of man. This calamity is**

not merely a punishment of the flesh, but also of the soul. … For God's plan is to create mankind only this once, and to save mankind only this once. This is the first time, and it is also the last. Therefore, no one can comprehend the painstaking intentions and fervent anticipation with which God saves mankind this time" ("God Is the Source of Man's Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). God's eagerness is to save mankind from the throes of disaster. If we are afraid to preach the gospel in fear of the CCP's persecution, hiding at home for comfort and survival in shame, our hearts will not be at peace!

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-education At Home

Question 10: I have been working for the United Front for many years, and I have studied various religious beliefs. Christianity, Catholicism and Eastern Orthodoxy are all orthodox religions that believe in Jesus. But your belief in Almighty God is so different. According to CCP documents, The Church of Almighty God does not belong to Christianity at all. You are preaching the gospel to various sects under the banner of Christianity that don't recognize you as a Christian denomination. So I will never allow you to believe in Almighty God. You can only believe in Christianity if you want. The government's persecution will be lighter this way. If you get arrested and incarcerated for believing in Almighty God, your life will be in danger. The CCP has already seen that all those who believe in Almighty God are invariably followers of Christ in the last days who are Christ's disciples and apostles. What the CCP fears most is the proclamations and testimonies of the book The Word Appears in the Flesh expressed by Christ in the last days, as well as this die-hard group that follows Christ in the last days. We have studied the history of Christianity. What Judaism and the Roman Empire feared most were the disciples and apostles of Jesus. So when these people were captured, they were executed by different methods of capital punishments. Today, if measures are not taken to suppress and completely ban this group of people who follow Christ of the last days, in less than a few years, they will subsume the entire religious community. At present, several main Christian factions in China have already been subsumed by The Church of Almighty God. The CCP is very clear about this. Had the CCP not fabricated some public opinions and contrived the Zhaoyuan Case, perhaps the day will come when the religious community of the world would be subsumed

by The Church of Almighty God. Once The Church of Almighty God subsumes the entire religious community, it will be very unfavorable to the rule of the CCP. Therefore, the Central Committee made a strong determination to deploy all available forces to thoroughly ban The Church of Almighty God in a short period. You need to know, the emergence of Eastern Lightning not only took China by storm, it also made a big splash in the world. Since you made such a big move, how can the CCP not frantically launch a wholesale suppression and arrest campaign against you? If you must believe in God, you can only believe in Christianity. You are absolutely forbidden to believe in Almighty God. The Church of Almighty God does not belong to Christianity, don't you know that?

Answer: You just uttered the underlying reason why the CCP suppresses The Church of Almighty God. But do you know why the major Christian factions were subsumed by The Church of Almighty God? It was because people of all sects and factions heard the voice of God. When they saw the appearance and work of Almighty God, they determined that the Lord Jesus had returned. So they all turned to Almighty God. This is the great news that believers throughout the religious community have long hoped for. Christ of the last days has appeared to work. It is a matter of course that all sects and factions of Christianity and Catholicism turn to Almighty God. It is also the trend of the times. This is enough to show that both the Christianity and The Church of Almighty God are created through the work of God. Christianity belongs to the Christian Church of the Age of Grace while The Church of Almighty God belongs to the Christian Church of the Age of Kingdom. They belong to Christianity just the same. Why does the CCP deny that The Church of Almighty God is part of

Christianity? The CCP is an atheist political party, a satanic regime that hates the truth and resists God most. What does it know about Christianity? What qualifications does it have to say about which church is Christianity and which is not? The CCP doesn't know a thing about Christianity. How dare it condemn the church of God. Isn't it utterly shameless of the CCP to act like it understands something that it doesn't? Christianity was created by the appearance and work of the incarnate Lord Jesus. As the Lord Jesus is Christ, all churches that believe in Him belong to Christianity. The Lord Jesus promised that He would return. The Lord Jesus has now returned, that is, the incarnate Almighty God. Almighty God is Christ in the last days. So the ones who believe in Almighty God also believe in Christ. All those that believe in Christ belong to Christianity. The Lord Jesus and Almighty God are the incarnate God on two occasions. They are one God. So faith in the Lord Jesus and faith in Almighty God both belong to Christianity. Naturally, The Church of Almighty God is contemporary Christianity. To be precise, in the last days, only the faith in Almighty God belongs to true Christianity, because the appearance of Almighty God—Christ of the last days—has ended the Age of Grace and inaugurated the Age of Kingdom. Only those who follow Almighty God, Christ of the last days, are those who follow the Lamb. Therefore, The Church of Almighty God of Christ in the last days is the more practical Christianity.

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-education At Home

Question 11: You witness that both Jesus and Almighty God are Christ, the first and the last Christ. Our CCP does not recognize it. In The Internationale, it clearly said, “There has never been any savior of the world.” You insist on witnessing the advent of Christ the Savior. How can the CCP not condemn you? In our opinion, the Jesus whom Christians believe in was an ordinary man. He was even nailed on the cross. Even Judaism did not recognize Him as Christ. The incarnate Almighty God in the last days that you witness is also an ordinary person in fact. The CCP's documents describe it clearly that He has a surname and first name. This is also a fact. Why do you witness that such an ordinary person is Christ, the appearance of God? It is really incredible! No matter how you witness what truth has been expressed and how judgment work in the last days has been done by Almighty God, our CCP will not recognize that this person is God. I think you are just like those people of Christianity, Catholicism, and Eastern Orthodoxy who believe in Jesus, believing in a man as God. Isn't it ignorant? What exactly is God and the appearance and work of God? Does it mean that the mere expression of the truth and doing the work of God are the appearance of the true God? This is what we will never accept. If God can perform miracles and wonders, destroy the CCP and all those who resist Him, then we will recognize Him as the true God. If God appears in the sky, makes a thunderous roar that frightens the entire human race, that is the appearance of God. Then our CCP will recognize Him. Otherwise, the CCP will never acknowledge there is God.

Answer: I just don't understand, why is the CCP always hostile to God? Why does it always deny God? Why does it particularly hate the incarnate Christ? Why does the CCP define the Lord Jesus and

Almighty God as an ordinary person, and deny the divine essence of Christ? You communists are atheists. You don't recognize the existence of God. How could you know the mystery behind the incarnation of God? Wasn't the appearance of the Lord Jesus a man when He became flesh? But a word of His could resurrect the dead and calm the wind and waves. He could feed five thousand people with five loaves and two fish. Wasn't it the power and authority of God? Without the Spirit of God inside, could man perform such miracles and wonders? When the Lord Jesus was crucified, it was God's desire to redeem mankind through crucifixion. When the Lord Jesus rose from death, appeared to the crowd and ascended to heaven, that was God's omnipotence. You don't recognize the man who could express the truth and perform God's work as Christ and God Himself. Then tell me, other than the incarnate Christ, who else you see can express the truth and perform God's work? Whether people believe it or not, the fact that God has become flesh and expressed the truth for the salvation of mankind is undeniable. Only those who abhor and detest the truth would deny Christ and resist Him. All of those who love the truth can accept and obey God's work. Recalling when the Lord Jesus was at work, the leaders of Judaism frantically resisted and condemned the incarnate Lord Jesus. The people of Judaism also rejected the Lord Jesus. But the fact of the Lord Jesus' redemption of mankind still spread around the world. Many people in countries throughout the world believe in the Lord Jesus. Christian churches are found everywhere. According to statistics, there are more than two billion people who believe in the Lord Jesus today. This is enough to prove that the Lord Jesus is Christ and the Savior. It is useless to deny it. In the last days, the

incarnate Almighty God expressed all the truths for the purification and salvation of mankind, and did the work of judgment beginning at the house of God. During His work, He was subject to the frantic resistance and condemnation of the satanic CCP regime and the antichrist forces of the religious community. But in merely twenty years, the kingdom gospel of Almighty God has swept across mainland China. Almighty God has made a group of overcomers, the firstfruits in China. Now, the word expressed by Almighty God and a variety of movies, videos and MVs produced by The Church of Almighty God have been posted on the Internet. More and more people are beginning to study the work of Almighty God in the last days. Do you think it was possible for man to do that? Such outcomes were only made possible by the guidance of the Holy Spirit's work. Can you say who in this world can express the truth and do work that can conquer and save mankind? Whose work can be extended to the entire human race? Other than the incarnate Christ, no one can do such work. This allows us to see the power and authority of God's word, the almightiness, wisdom, and wonderful acts of God. Almighty God is the appearance of God incarnate, the Christ of the last days. This is completely true.

God has become flesh to express the truth and do His own work. It cannot be altered by man’s will. Whether you recognize God's incarnation or not, God's work cannot be stopped. Almighty God says, “**The work of God surges onward like a mighty wave. No one can detain Him, and no one can halt His march. Only those who listen carefully to His words, and who seek and thirst for Him, can follow His footsteps and receive His promise. Those who do not shall be subjected to**

overwhelming disaster and well-deserved punishment" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). The judgment work of Almighty God in the last days is about to end. The catastrophe is imminent. All those who deny and resist God will be destroyed. It will be too late and futile to recognize Almighty God by then. Only those who have been cleansed and made perfect by receiving Almighty God's judgment in the last days can survive in the catastrophe and enter the kingdom of God.

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-Education At Home

Question 12: According to the government's propaganda materials, The Church of Almighty God was founded by someone named Zhao in northeastern China. This man is the high priest of The Church of Almighty God. He is leading the Church. Believers of The Church of Almighty God claim that he is someone used by the Holy Spirit. They often listen to the preaching of this person who is used by the Holy Spirit, and they listen to him in the administrative work of the church. Although you believers of Almighty God read the word of Almighty God, pray in the name of Almighty God, regard The Word Appears in the Flesh expressed by Almighty God as canonical doctrine, and communicate the word of Almighty God in your congregation, in any case, this person is the one who has the final say in The Church of Almighty God. So we are certain that The Church of Almighty God was created by this person. Both the CCP and the religious community characterize The Church of Almighty God as an organization of man. I think it is true. Do you understand this?

Answer: The CCP has studied The Church of Almighty God for more than 20 years, do you mean that is the result of such a study? Then tell me, who founded Christianity and Catholicism? Could it be Paul or Peter who was the founder? Who founded Judaism? Could it be Moses? Isn't it absurd? You atheists have never acknowledged the existence of God, not to mention the fact of God's incarnation. No matter the incarnate Christ has expressed how much truth, accomplished how much work, and brought how much salvation to mankind, don't you all endeavor to deny, cover up and condemn Him? Do you think that Christianity and Catholicism were founded by man, so these are organizations of man? This is your greatest absurdity. Had the Lord Jesus not appeared to work, no believers or

followers of the Lord would have been engendered, let alone the creation of Christianity. Isn't this the fact? How could the apostles have created a church on the merit of their own giftedness alone? Can you go by people's reception of the leadership and shepherding of Peter, John and other apostles and say that Christianity was founded by the apostles and it is an organization of man? The Church of Almighty God was begotten entirely by the appearance and work of Almighty God. It was because people heard the voice of God from many truths expressed by Almighty God that they returned before God and coalesced into the church. Upon appearing to work, Almighty God personally witnessed the man used by the Holy Spirit, who is the leader of The Church of Almighty God. Just as Moses in the Age of Law and the apostles in the Age of Grace, he is the man used by God to do his duty to water, shepherd and lead the chosen people of God. Your Communist Party denies God's work and all the truths expressed by God, even denying that the One believed in and followed by the chosen people of God is the incarnate God. Isn't there an ulterior motive? Had it not been the appearance and work of Almighty God, The Church of Almighty God would not have been begotten, and it would not exist. This is an undeniable fact. The CCP is consciously aware that the Christians of The Church of Almighty God pray in the name of Almighty God. What they read and communicate in congregation is the word of Almighty God. Why does the CCP still tell such glaring lies? The One God's chosen people of The Church of Almighty God believe in is Almighty God. God's chosen people follow the leadership of the man who is used by the Holy Spirit according to the word of Almighty God. This is a fact.

You will know clearly when I read two passages of Almighty God's word to you. Almighty God says, "**The work carried out by the one who is used by God is in order to cooperate with the work of Christ or the Holy Spirit. This man is raised up among man by God, he is there to lead all of God's chosen ones, and he is also raised up by God in order to do the work of human cooperation. ... The man who is used by God, on the other hand, is someone who has been prepared by God, and who possesses a certain caliber, and has humanity. He has been prepared and made perfect in advance by the Holy Spirit, and is completely led by the Holy Spirit, and, particularly when it comes to his work, he is directed and commanded by the Holy Spirit—as a result of this there is no deviation on the path of leading God's chosen ones, for God surely takes responsibility for His own work, and God does His own work at all times**" ("Concerning God's Use of Man" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). In "The Ten Administrative Decrees That Must Be Obeyed by God's Chosen People in the Age of Kingdom," the seventh administrative decree also states clearly: "**In work and matters of the church, apart from obeying God, follow the instructions of the man who is used by the Holy Spirit in everything. Even the slightest infraction is unacceptable. Be absolute in your compliance, and do not analyze right or wrong; what is right or wrong has nothing to do with you. You must concern yourself only with total obedience**" God's chosen people's acceptance of the leadership and watering of the man used by the Holy Spirit is practicing God's word and obeying God. When

your CCP studied The Church of Almighty God, why didn't it take the time to read Almighty God's word? Why hasn't it seen the ten administrative decrees of Almighty God? Why didn't you seek from God's chosen people of The Church of Almighty God and let them communicate the truth to you? You merely studied The Church of Almighty God from the outside without reading Almighty God's word and understanding God's work, how could you really understand The Church of Almighty God?

Why does the CCP government keep saying that The Church of Almighty God is an organization of man? Why hasn't it said a word about the incarnate God? Why hasn't it mentioned a word about the book **The Word Appears in the Flesh**? Actually, what the CCP fears most is the truth expressed by Almighty God, because the CCP knows deep down that all the believers of Almighty God have accepted Almighty God after reading the book **The Word Appears in the Flesh**. So the CCP distracts people's attention by saying that The Church of Almighty God is an organization of man created by man to intentionally conceal the fact of Almighty God, Christ of the last days, appearing to work, so people will pay attention to this person. The CCP does this in order to stop people from believing in and following God. This is its real purpose. The CCP distorts the facts and asserts that the church where God appears to work is an organization of man. This is the CCP's excuse for suppressing and persecuting God's church. The CCP is too cunning and vicious! Isn't what I said the truth? You have to distinguish between them. You must not listen to the rumors of the CCP anymore!

Excerpted from the movie script of Red Re-Education At Home

Question 13: All of you believe in God; I believe in Marx and Lenin. My specialty is research of various religious beliefs. Through many years of research, I have discovered a problem. All religious belief holds that there is a God. Yet of all the people who believe in God, none has ever seen God. Their belief is based solely on their own feelings. I therefore have reached a conclusion about religious belief: Religious belief is purely imaginary; it is superstition, and has no basis in science. Modern society is a society in which science is highly developed. Everything must be based on science in order for there to be no mistakes. We Communist Party members believe in Marxism-Leninism. We don't believe that there is a God. How does The Internationale go? "There has never been any Savior of the world, nor deities, nor emperors on which to depend. To create humankind's happiness, we must entirely depend on ourselves!" The Internationale clearly states "There has never been any Savior of the world." The reason that the human race in the past believed in God and practiced superstition is mainly because human beings at that time, facing such phenomena of the natural world as the sun, moon, and stars; wind, rain, thunder, and lightning, had no way to produce a scientific explanation. Hence, fear and wonder arose in their minds about supernatural powers. Thus the earliest concepts of religion were formed. Also, when humans could not solve such difficulties as natural disasters, and disease, they hoped to attain spiritual comfort through respectfully making obeisance to God. This is how religion came into being. Obviously, this was not rational, and it was not scientific! Nowadays, the human race has advanced, and science is flourishing. In such fields as the aerospace industry, biotechnology, genetic engineering, and medicine, the human race has made

considerable progress. In the past, human beings did not understand, and had no way to solve many problems. Nowadays these problems can all be explained through science, and science can be relied on to provide solutions. In this age of developed science and technology, if people still believe in God, is this not foolish and ignorant? Wouldn't such people be left behind by this age? The only practical thing is for us to believe in science.

Answer: You say that religious belief is due to humans lagging behind in scientific knowledge, and is formed from fear and wonder in the face of supernatural powers, and that it is superstition. This argument is incorrect, and is unfounded. Religious belief and the feudal superstition of which you speak are two entirely different things. You Communists condemn and ban religious belief under the pretense of opposing feudalistic superstition. This is absurd. Of the main world religions, Judaism, Catholicism, the Eastern Orthodox Church, and Christianity believe in God and in the Lord Jesus. Only this is authentic religious belief. Three thousand years ago, the work of God during the Age of Law gave rise to Judaism. A long time ago, the Israelites heard the voice of God, and they knew the name of God. All along, they prayed to Jehovah God, observing all of the laws and commandments proclaimed by Jehovah. They all worshiped Jehovah God. We may therefore ascertain that Judaism came into being because of the work of God during the Age of Law. When the Age of Grace arrived, God became incarnate as the Lord Jesus, and began to work. He accomplished the atonement for the human race when He was crucified. Ever greater numbers of people professed belief in the Lord Jesus, and the church of the Lord Jesus was formed. With the passage of several hundred years, Christianity,

Catholicism, and the Eastern Orthodox Church evolved. They are the largest religions in the world. All of them formed because of the Lord Jesus' work of redemption. Almighty God of the last days has expressed truth and done judgment work, and has conquered and saved people of various sects and factions. People who sincerely believe in God have heard the voice of God, and come to pledge allegiance at the throne of God. Thus The Church of Almighty God came into being. These facts suffice to show that religious belief was produced completely from God's appearance and work. God's appearance and work is verified by the life experiences of countless Christians. No force can topple or ban the church of God or God's chosen people. This is fact. Since the beginning of human history, God has been at work guiding human beings, redeeming the human race, and saving the human race. The appearance and work of God leads the entire human race to grow forward. These facts cannot be denied by anyone. You specialize in research of religious belief. You should understand these things. Why do you distort historical facts, saying that religious belief is a product of an ignorant and backward human race? Aren't these statements rather absurd?

You have studied religious belief for so many years. You are not even able to distinguish between feudal superstition and religious belief. This illustrates that you really don't understand religious belief. Nowadays, more and more people believe in God. The number of believers exceeds one-third of the world's population. Many of the world's greatest scientists have been Christians, for instance, Newton, Galileo, Copernicus, and others. Would you say that these people were superstitious, and did not believe in science? Science can produce some results in research of the material world, but it is

powerless to explore and study the spiritual realm. Our belief in God is not based on science. Rather our belief is based on the words and work of God. The Holy Bible is the witness of the work of God, and it is a historical record of the human race's experience of God's work. Prophets in the Bible predicted thousands of years ago what would happen in the last days. These prophecies have basically all come true, which suffices to show that God's appearance and work is real, Amen! and that it is God who rules the human race, and who rules the entire universe. No one can deny these facts.

You say that because people cannot see God, God does not exist. So, when you burn imitation money and kowtow at the ancestral tablet of the deceased, do you see the soul of the dead person? In seeking evil spirits and psychics to tell fortunes, can you see the realm of departed spirits? If not, then why do you burn imitation money, kowtow, practice divination, and tell fortunes? You repeat over and over again that God does not exist, and preach atheism on a large scale, but privately, however, you believe in fake gods, and worship evil spirits. Isn’t this action of yours telling lies and deceiving the people, duping the people? You plainly see that the words and work of the true God are truth, and that they bring to the human race light and salvation, yet you obstinately deny, resist, and oppose human beings' belief in the true God under the banner of atheism, wildly suppressing religious belief, and ruthlessly persecuting Christians. Ultimately what problem is this? God is Spirit; though people cannot see God's spiritual body, they can hear God speaking words, and can see the work of God. This is a fact that is absolutely true. For thousands of years, God has been speaking, guiding the human race, saving the human race, and ruling the fate

of the human race. God has also revealed many deeds. Humans' experience and practical knowledge of these things gave rise to many proverbs, such as "Trust the will of Heaven," "Man proposes, God disposes," "Humans may sow the seed, but the harvest depends on Heaven," "Heaven always provides a way," "Heaven's plans supersede our own," "Mans fortune is written in the stars," etc. All of this proves that there is a Ruler who is managing and arranging all the human world, leading, blessing, and nurturing this human race. There are also the oft-heard sayings, "There is a spirit watching right above your head," "As people act, Heaven watches," and "What goes around comes around." This all shows that God is the Lord of creation, and that God has been ruling over all things all along. God's Spirit keeps watch over all. God metes out retribution according to people's actions, and decides the fate of human beings.

You say that because no one sees God, God does not exist. This point of view is incorrect! Have you sought the appearance and work of God? Have you read The Holy Bible, and The Word Appears in the Flesh? The Bible says, "**In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God**" (Jhn 1:1). Though human beings have not seen the Spirit of God, they can hear the voice of God, can see the words expressed by God, and can experience the actions of God for themselves. Over the millennia, God has done three stages of work. In Israel, He did the work of the Age of Law, proclaiming His laws and commandments to the people of Israel. In the Age of Grace, God incarnate did the work of redemption. The sins of countless people were forgiven through their belief in the Lord Jesus. They lived in God's presence and enjoyed the peace and happiness that God gave. In the Age of Kingdom, God

has been incarnated again, and expresses truth to do the work of judgment, purifying people, and saving people. God has done so many things. How can people not see this? How can people still make irresponsible remarks, claiming that God does not exist? We don't only rely on eyes for our belief in God. The main basis of belief is the appearance and work of God. God incarnate has said very many words. The words of God are completely different from those of people. No person could say such words. The words of God have authority and power. Every day they come true, and are being fulfilled. Every stage of God's work saves many people, bringing them to face God, allowing them to see that God exists and to know God's disposition. For these reasons more and more people turn toward God. How can it be that you are unable to see this actuality? I will share with you a few passages of Almighty God's words. When you have heard the words of Almighty God, you will better understand the facts of God's universal creation and sovereignty over everything.

Almighty God says, "**In the vastness of the cosmos and the firmament, countless creatures live and reproduce, follow the cyclical law of life, and adhere to one constant rule. Those who die take with them the stories of the living, and those who are living repeat the same tragic history of those who have perished. And so, mankind cannot help but ask himself: Why do we live? And why do we have to die? Who commands this world? And who created this mankind? Was mankind really created by Mother Nature? Is mankind really in control of his own fate? ... Mankind simply does not know who the Sovereign of the universe and all things**

is, much less the beginning and future of mankind. Mankind merely lives, perforce, amidst this law. None can escape it and none can change it, for among all things and in the heavens there is but One from everlasting to everlasting who holds sovereignty over everything. He is the One who has never been beheld by man, the One whom mankind has never known, in whose existence mankind has never believed—yet He is the One who blew the breath into mankind's ancestors and gave life to mankind. He is the One who provides and nourishes mankind, allowing him to exist; and He is the One who has guided mankind up to the present day. Moreover, He and He alone is the One mankind depends on for survival. He holds sovereignty over all things and rules all living beings in the universe. He commands the four seasons, and it is He who calls forth wind, frost, snow, and rain. He brings mankind sunshine and ushers in the night. It was He who laid out the heavens and earth, providing man with the mountains, lakes, and rivers and all of the living things within them. His deeds are omnipresent, His power is omnipresent, His wisdom is omnipresent, and His authority is omnipresent. Each of these laws and rules is the embodiment of His deeds, and each one reveals His wisdom and authority. Who can exempt themselves from His sovereignty? And who can discharge themselves from His designs? All things exist beneath His gaze, and moreover, all things live under His sovereignty. His deeds and His power leave mankind with no choice but to acknowledge the fact that He really does

exist and holds sovereignty over all things" ("Man Can Only Be Saved Amidst God's Management" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Since the day man came into existence, God has ever worked thus, managing the universe, directing the rules of change for all things and the trajectory of their movement. Like all things, man is quietly and unknowingly nourished by the sweetness and rain and dew from God; like all things, man unknowingly lives beneath the orchestration of God's hand. Man's heart and spirit are held in the hand of God, everything of his life is beheld in the eyes of God. Regardless of whether or not you believe this, any and all things, whether living or dead, will shift, change, renew, and disappear in accordance with God's thoughts. Such is the way in which God presides over all things**" ("God Is the Source of Man's Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**Though humanity does not admit that God exists nor accept the fact that the Creator made and has dominion over everything, and moreover does not recognize the existence of the Creator's authority, human scientists, astronomers, and physicists are nonetheless finding more and more that the existence of all things in the universe, and the principles and patterns that dictate their movements, are all governed and controlled by a vast and invisible dark energy. This fact compels man to confront and acknowledge that there is a Mighty One in the midst of these patterns of movement, orchestrating everything. His power is extraordinary, and though no one can see His true**

face, He governs and controls everything at every moment. No man or force can reach beyond His sovereignty. Faced with this fact, man must recognize that the laws governing the existence of all things cannot be controlled by humans, cannot be changed by anyone; he must also admit that human beings cannot fully understand these laws, and they are not naturally occurring, but are dictated by a Sovereign" ("God Himself, the Unique III" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

Excerpted from the movie script of The Lies of Communism

Question 14: In your belief in God, you all have your own ideas and opinions. It seems to me that your ideas and theories are feelings of subjective consciousness, and are of the illusory category of things. We Communists believe that materialism and the theory of evolution are truth, because they are in accord with science. Our country comprehensively provides materialist, evolutionist education from elementary school through university. Why is this? It is to imbue all young people and teenagers with atheist and evolutionist thinking from an early age, so that they all stay away from religion, and stay away from superstition, and so that they can scientifically and rationally explain all questions. Take, for example, the question of the origin of life. People in the past were ignorant and backward, and believed such stories as Pangu separating heaven and earth, and Nüwa making humans. As for Westerners, they believe that God created the human race. In fact, all of these are mythology and legend, and are not in accord with science at all. Ever since the appearance of the theory of evolution that explained the origin of the human race clearly, how humans evolved from apes, the theory of evolution has thoroughly invalidated the legends of God creating man. All things have evolved naturally. This is the only truth. Therefore we must believe in science, and in the theory of evolution. You are all educated, knowledgeable people. How can you go and believe in God? Would you be able to chat about your views?

Answer: You Communist Party members believe that materialism and the theory of evolution are the truth, and you revere Marx and Darwin. Then why is it that ever fewer people in the world believe in materialism and in the theory of evolution? Of the whole human race, believers in God make up the majority. Of all the people

who genuinely believe in God, none believe in the theory of evolution. Even among people who don't believe in God, there are not many who completely believe in the theory of evolution. Are there humans nowadays who believe in Darwin? Are there people who recognize the theory of evolution as truth? Perhaps there are not many of this kind of person. Do all of the people who believe in the theory of evolution acknowledge that apes are their ancestors? When they perform memorial ceremonies for their ancestors, do they perform obeisance to the apes? If even they don't perform obeisance to the apes, yet repeat over and over again that the theory of evolution is truth, they are not practicing what they preach, are they? You all venerate science, base everything on science, and use science to explain all problems. Then, may I ask: Is science truth? How did science come into being, ultimately? Why are many scientific theories published by scientists later refuted by other scientists? Do you dare to say that science is truth? So I ask you: Can science purify the corruption of the human race? Can science save the human race from Satan’s power? Can science cause people to cast aside sin and live a life of significance? Can science bring peace to the world? Can science bring the human race happiness and a glorious destination? Can science bestow safety and gladness upon people? Can science predict the development and destination of the human race? Science cannot attain any of this. How can you say that science is truth? So ultimately what is truth, do you dare to say for sure?

Because you believe in science so much, and praise science so highly, please explain for us: ultimately what is science? Science is a few theories in the realm of knowledge achieved by the research of the corrupt human race when faced with the universe and world that

God made. It is produced completely from the brains of human beings. The corrupt human race does not possess truth. It does not possess the least bit of truth. How, then, can scientific knowledge produced by the corrupt human race be truth? Truth can come only from God. Only God is the Creator. Only the words expressed by the Creator are truth. Ever since God appeared and worked, expressing many words, the human race has experienced these words of God. They have been able to recognize that only God's words are truth; they are the ever-unchanging fact. In the Age of Law, God proclaimed many words, leading humans to observe the laws of God, thereby obtaining God's caring protection, and blessing. Those who transgressed the laws were declared guilty and cursed. During the Age of Grace, the Lord Jesus was crucified for the sins of mankind, and became the Redeemer of the human race. By believing in the Lord Jesus, people's sins were pardoned, and they could enjoy the grace and blessing of God. With the arrival of the Age of Kingdom, Almighty God has appeared and done work, expressing truth to judge and purify the human race, thoroughly saving the human race to gain freedom from Satan's power, causing people to turn toward God, and gain God's blessing, bestowing upon people a wonderful destination. The facts of God's work suffice to show that the words of God are truth, and that what they bring to the human race is light, blessing, and salvation. For millennia, God has used words to lead the human race, to guide the human race to where they are today. God uses words to accomplish everything. Every one of God's words is coming true, they are all being made good. These are the facts that the whole human race can see. The Lord Jesus said, "**For truly I say to you, Till heaven and earth pass, one stroke or one**

pronunciation mark shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled" (Mat 5:18). "**Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away**" (Mat 24:35). Now the last days have arrived, and the majority of Christians have seen that the prophecies of the Lord Jesus have come true and been accomplished. This goes to show that only the words of God are truth, and only the words of God are the positive things. These are facts that no person can deny. Only God can save the human race. Only the words of God are truth, and can be the life of humans. Science certainly is not truth! Science has been developing until today, but what has it actually brought? From the outside, it appears that humans have achieved some positive results from the development of science. The standard of living appears to have gone up, and society appears to be thriving and prosperous. In reality, though, the development of science has brought about a crisis of belief to the human race, causing humans to distance themselves from God, to deny God, and to betray God. Because they believe in science, many people have not sought God, though they know He exists. Rather they pursue pleasures and enjoyment of the flesh. Under the influence of this kind of trend, the morality and character of the human race has increasingly declined, becoming more and more wicked and abnormal. The souls of people are ever more empty. People all seek excitement, and indulge lust. Drug addiction and suicide are ever more common. Is this not true? During the same time that the human race has developed science, it also has seriously damaged the ecosystem and environment, causing air pollution, water pollution, soil pollution, food pollution, etc. This has caused the human race a great deal of harm. In particular, countries of the

world are engaged in arms races, racking their brains to manufacture sophisticated weapons. Science has made nuclear weapons, guided missiles, and chemical weapons, which cause the entire human race to be faced with the danger of destruction. If World War III erupts, it will bring great calamity to the human race. It is possible to foresee that the day on which science develops to its pinnacle, that will be the end of the human race. I will fellowship with you a passage of the words of Almighty God. When you hear this you will know whether science ultimately has brought blessing or disaster to the human race.

Almighty God says, "**Since mankind's contrivance of the social sciences, the mind of man has become occupied by science and knowledge. Science and knowledge then have become tools for the ruling of mankind, and there is no longer sufficient room for man to worship God, and no more favorable conditions for the worship of God. The position of God has sunk ever lower in the heart of man. Without God in his heart, man's inner world is dark, hopeless and empty. ... Science, knowledge, freedom, democracy, leisure, comfort: these bring man only a temporary consolation. Even with these things, man will inevitably sin and bemoan the injustices of society. These things cannot restrain man's craving and desire to explore. This is because man was made by God and the senseless sacrifices and explorations of man can only lead to more distress and can only cause man to exist in a constant state of fear, not knowing how to face the future of mankind or how to face the path that lies ahead. Man will even come to**

fear science and knowledge, and fear even more the feeling of emptiness. ... If the people of a country or a nation are unable to receive the salvation and care of God, then such a country or nation will tread the road to ruin, toward darkness, and shall be annihilated by God" ("God Presides Over the Fate of All Mankind" in The Word Appears in the Flesh).

"**They continually carry out scientific exploration and dive deep into research, and then ceaselessly act in such a way as to satisfy their own material needs and desires; what then are the consequences for man? First of all, the ecological balance is broken, and when this happens, people's bodies, their internal organs, are tainted and damaged by this unbalanced environment, and various infectious diseases and plagues spread across the world. Is it not true that this is now a situation that man has no control over? Now that you understand this, if mankind does not follow God, but always follows Satan in this way—using knowledge to continually enrich themselves, using science to ceaselessly explore the future of human life, using this kind of method to continue living—can you recognize how this will end for mankind?** (It will mean extinction.) **Yes, it will end in extinction: Mankind draws ever nearer to its own extinction, one step after another!**" ("God Himself, the Unique VI" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Everything that Almighty God's words reveal is fact and truth. Isn't this what we now see as the consequence brought to the human race by developed science? The corrupt human race all venerates science.

This is very dangerous! Science developing like this has brought calamity and destruction to the human race!

God is the Creator. Only God can save the human race. Almighty God of the last days expresses truth, and does judgment work for the purpose of purifying and saving a deeply corrupt human race. Almighty God says, "**My final work is not only for the sake of punishing man, but also for the sake of arranging the destination of man. Moreover, it is so that all people may acknowledge My deeds and actions. I want each and every person to see that all I have done is right, and that all I have done is an expression of My disposition. It is not man's doing, much less nature, that brought forth mankind, but I, who nourish every living being in creation. Without My existence, mankind will only perish and suffer the scourge of calamity. No human being will ever again see the beauteous sun and moon, or the verdant world; mankind shall encounter only the frigid night and the inexorable valley of the shadow of death. I am mankind's only salvation. I am mankind's only hope and, even more, I am He on whom the existence of all mankind rests. Without Me, mankind will immediately come to a standstill. Without Me, mankind will suffer catastrophe and be trampled underfoot by all manner of ghosts…. The disaster originates with Me and is of course orchestrated by Me. If you cannot appear as good in My eyes, then you will not escape suffering the disaster**" ("Prepare Sufficient Good Deeds for Your Destination" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). Only by submitting to God's judgment work of the last days, accepting all

truth expressed by Christ, can one's corrupt disposition attain purification, and can one submit to God and worship God. Only in this way can one be preserved from the end-time destruction by God's protection, to get into God's kingdom.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Lies of Communism

Question 15: National leaders have labeled Christianity and Catholicism as cults, and labeled the Holy Bible as a cult book. These are generally acknowledged facts. As to why central government has labeled Christian house churches, and in particular The Church of Almighty God as cults, as my understanding and research inform me, I consider it to be like this: All who testify that God created all things, who testify that God is the Creator, that God created mankind, who testify that God rules over everything, and testify that God is the Lord of the universe, and controls the universe, and would have the human race revere only God, submit to God, and worship God, all these are cults. All who testify that God is righteous, holy, and great, who bear witness to God's love and salvation of the human race, who condemn Satan as the devil who corrupts the human race, and as an evil force that rules the world, especially who directly attack and condemn the Communist Party, all these are cults. All who testify that the Lord Jesus has returned, who bear witness for Christ incarnate, and talk of the words and work of an ordinary human as if it were the appearance and work of the Savior, and also publicize and testify that all of the words expressed by Christ are truth, calling upon the human race to accept God, to turn toward God, and to submit to God, and who do not yield to the Communist Party, all these are cults. All who testify that the words of God are truth, and higher than everything, who testify that the Holy Bible is God's word and that The Word Appears in the Flesh is truth, and do their utmost to eliminate and condemn Marxism-Leninism and the ideology and theory of the Communist Party, all these are cults. All who teach about and bear witness for Christ of the last days, who preach that God has returned, making all of the human race accept God's

salvation, and who call upon people to abandon everything and follow God as the only way to get into the kingdom of heaven, all these are cults. This is my understanding of the central government's labeling all Christian house churches, in particular The Church of Almighty God, as cults. Do all of you know what a cult is by now? In China, the Communist Party is in control. The Communist Party is a Marxist-Leninist, atheist political party that opposes all theism. The Communist Party declares guilty as cults all religious groups that believe in God. This demonstrates the absolute authority of the Communist Party. Only the Communist Party is great, glorious, and correct. Anything that goes against or is hostile toward Marxism-Leninism is wrong; it is something that the Communist Party wants to ban. In China, it is necessary to esteem Marxism-Leninism and the Communist Party as great. Could it be that there is something wrong with this? You of The Church of Almighty God openly spread that Jesus has returned, and is none other than Christ of the last days, Almighty God. You also testify that Almighty God expresses truth to purify people, to save people, and that the kingdom of heaven has already arrived on earth. This has resulted in shaking up and dividing religious circles, leading to millions of people turning toward Almighty God. This has caused a giant sensation in China, and has brought severe confusion and unrest to society. In so doing, aren't you disturbing public order? The central government therefore declares The Church of Almighty God guilty of being a cult, and implements severe attack and suppression. You are all deceived and have gone astray. The government hopes that you waste no time in repenting, distancing yourselves from The Church of Almighty God,

and joining the Three-Self Church. In this way, the government will no longer hold you criminally responsible.

Answer: You have explained very clearly the basis of the Communist Party labeling something cults. I feel, however, that the condemnation by the Communist Party is fallacious, and is absurd. Ultimately what is righteous, and what is evil, must be based on whether it tallies with truth, and whether or not the words of God can be a determining basis. First of all, we should all know, that only the one true God who created all things is the truth. God is the Most High, and is One whom the human race should worship. There are sayings, “There is a spirit watching right above your head,” “Humans act, and Heaven watches,” “The will of Heaven cannot be violated,” “Justice is in the heart of man,” “Good begets good, evil begets evil,” “No prayer can save offense of Heaven,” etc. All of these sayings prove that God is the Ruler of all things and He observes everything. God is truth, and all positive things come from God. Legal norms and moral standards in human society all come from the work of God, and from the words of God. Ever since creation, God has been expressing truth, guiding humans, redeeming humans, and saving humans. God is therefore man’s great Redeemer. Human beings’ belief in God, submission to God, worship of God, and following the way of God, all these are positive things, are the correct path of human life, and meet with God's blessing. On the other hand, all negative things, all evil things come from Satan. All those things that deny God, resist God, or are hostile to God, only these are evil things. So, what is a cult, ultimately? It can be said that all that is inimical to God, all that is in opposition to all of the truths that God has expressed, all that denies God, resists God, or condemns the work of

God, and leads people to darkness, causing people to be far away from God, resist God, and become ever more wicked as they fall into evil, leading God to express wrath, and send down disaster, this kind of organization, this kind of evil power is what a cult is. Ever since the Chinese Communist Party came to power, it has spread atheism and the theory of evolution to deceive and corrupt the Chinese people, and has caused the Chinese people to go on a path of denying God, resisting God, and betraying God, thus offending the disposition of God, meeting the curses of God. In resisting God, the Chinese Communist Party has brought about endless calamity. The people are sunk into an abyss of suffering, are in unbearable pain, and flee abroad one after another. During so many years of power, the Chinese Communist Party has hated God exceedingly, and has opposed God, and has done lots and lots of evil, too numerous to record. The Chinese Communist Party is therefore the only real cult! In declaring Christian churches guilty of being cults, the Chinese Communist Party is totally confusing truth with falsehood, and distorting facts.

Which principles to use as the basis for distinguishing the right path from a cult, this is something worthy of people's deep thought! For thousands of years, Satan has spread various heresies and fallacies to deceive and corrupt the human race, causing humans to deny God, resist God, and betray God. This has caused the human world to be more and more dark, evil, and chaotic. Especially since the Communist Party has come to power, it's been preaching atheism and the theory of evolution on a large scale, saying such things as "This world is completely devoid of God, and there has never been any such thing as the Savior," and "I am my own lord throughout

heaven and earth," "Man can conquer nature and fight against heaven and earth," as well as the saying, "One's destiny is in his own hand," and "Every man for himself, and the devil take the hindmost," and "Money makes the world go round," and other such heresies and fallacies that deceive and corrupt the Chinese people, causing people to become more and more arrogant and conceited, self-centered and treacherous, greedy and wicked. People's conscience has vanished, and their humanity has disappeared. Like foul devils and beasts, people stop at no evil. They even murder each other. In China, the darkest, most wicked place in the world, upon which the great red dragon is lying, God has appeared, done work, and expressed truth for the purpose of thoroughly purifying and saving the human race, causing the human race to escape the dark rule of Satan's power, to completely turn to God, and proceed upon the path of light. These are all positive things! However, they have met with wild condemnation, and brutal suppression and persecution by the Chinese Communist Party. In doing this, isn't the CCP perversely acting against Heaven? People who have a conscience all recognize that belief in God is the right path, and that only the appearance and work of God, only the truth expressed by God can save the human race. The only true way, therefore, is the One that expresses truth, and can save the human race. All that deceives the human race, that corrupts the human race, and causes the human race to walk a path of darkness and evil, all that certainly is an evil cult. Only this is the foundational criterion for distinguishing the right path from a cult. If a church that receives the work of God and accepts truth is labeled as a cult, is this not confusing truth with falsehood, and extremely absurd? Only God is the way, the truth, and the life. Only the

appearance and work of God can bring truth and light to the human race, and can save the human race from sin and Satan's influence, and bring the human race to a glorious destination. The most evil deed is when a church that receives the work of God is labeled as a cult. Only the Communist Party could do such an evil thing. Every stage of God's work is for saving the human race. For instance, in the Age of Grace, God was incarnated for the first time as the Lord Jesus. From the outside, He appeared to be an ordinary person. The Lord Jesus expressed all the truth to redeem the human race, however. In His crucifixion, He served as a sin offering for the human race, causing humans to be free of condemnation and curses of the law, allowing them to live in the grace and blessing of God. Judaism at the time colluded with the ruling power, and did their utmost to convict the Lord Jesus. They crucified the Lord Jesus. They believed that by doing this, they would put an end to the work of the Lord Jesus, and that their goal would be reached. But what was the result? Today, the gospel of the Lord Jesus redeeming the human race has spread all around the world. Hundreds of millions of people have received the grace and blessing of God. Religious circles have already acknowledged that the Lord Jesus is Christ, and is the Savior. The Christian church that was produced by the appearance and work of the Lord Jesus is the true way; it is the orthodox religion! Only the atheism of the Communist Party condemned Christian churches as cults, and condemned the Holy Bible as a cult book. Aren't these the facts? that the Chinese Communist Party could condemn the appearance and work of the Lord Jesus, and could declare Christianity guilty of being a cult is not at all surprising, because the CCP government is a satanic regime that most despises truth, and

most despises God. In particular it hates every time that God appears and does work. This is completely determined by its satanic nature. In the last days the Lord Jesus has returned as none other than God incarnate, Almighty God, who has expressed truth to do the judgment work of the last days, in order to thoroughly purify and save the human race, and bring people into God's kingdom, completely ending this old era of darkness and evil. The fact that God appeared and did work is sufficient to prove that it is God whose every stage of work is leading the whole human race to develop, and that all the truths expressed by God are guiding the human race on its path toward the light. Without the words and work of God, the human race would stagnate and make no progress, and would sink deeper and deeper in sin, courting destruction. If there are people who would declare guilty every stage of God's work as a cult, what problem is this, ultimately? This is something that is really worthy of our reflection and deep consideration! Nowadays, people of various sects and factions who love truth and seek the light have read the words of Almighty God and are able to declare that the words of Almighty God are the truth, and are the voice of God. Almighty God is the appearance of the Savior of the last days. The words and work of Almighty God are the true way, and have already been accepted, witnessed, and spread by more and more people. Why does the Communist Party insist upon doing its utmost to condemn and persecute the work and the church of God? Why is it that the more it is God's appearance and work, the more that something is truth, the more positive something is, the more the Communist Party condemns, attacks, and bans it? Isn't this going against Heaven, and extremely reactionary? Now, we can all see clearly that any party or

organization that hates truth, denies God, resists God, or is hostile to God is the only real cult. Anything that fabricates various rumors and fallacies to deceive and corrupt the human race is a cult. Anything that suppresses and condemns the Christian church, and is hostile toward Christ is a cult. Anything that denies Christ, that denies truth, that opposes truth, or is hostile toward Christ is a cult. The Communist Party is the political party that most denies God, that most resists God, that most hates truth, and that most hates Christ. Therefore, the Communist Party is a typical, genuine evil cult.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Lies of Communism

Question 16: You say that Almighty God is the appearance of God in the last days, and is the true way. You also say that it was God who created this world, and who rules over what happens in this world, that it is God's work that has guided and saved people all along. What basis in fact do you have for saying this? We Communist Party members are atheists, and do not recognize God's existence or God's sovereignty in the least. Even less do we recognize the appearance and work of God incarnate of which you talk. The Jesus in whom Christianity believes is clearly a person. He had parents, and had siblings. Christianity, however, absolutely requires that He be treated as Christ, and be worshiped as God. This is utterly inconceivable. Almighty God in whom you believe is just like Jesus, clearly just an ordinary person. Why must you obstinately insist that He is God incarnate? Why must you bear witness that He is Christ Savior of the last days in person? Isn't this terribly foolish and ignorant? There is no such thing in this world as God. Even less does there exist a God as God incarnate. You obstinately say that an ordinary person is God incarnate. What is the basis of this? Are you all able to express the grounds and basis of your belief?

Answer: God is Spirit. People cannot see Him or touch Him. But the Spirit of God does things, and says words that people can see and hear. This is true. From the facts recorded by the Bible we can see that the Spirit of God can speak through thunder, and can appear and speak to people through flames of fire, and can be incarnated to come among people to speak to people. These are facts that no one can deny. God has guided people all along, over thousands of years, and has done three stages of work in the Age of Law, the Age of Grace, and the Age of Kingdom. In every stage of work, God has

expressed many words. In the Age of Grace, God was incarnated as the Lord Jesus to express truth, and was nailed to the cross for the sins of mankind, doing the work of redeeming the human race. During the Age of Kingdom, God has become incarnate again as Almighty God, has expressed truth to do the judgment work of the last days, has come to thoroughly purify and save the human race, and lead the human race to a glorious destination. Thereupon the age of evil and darkness came to an end. All of the words that God spoke during the two times He was incarnated allowed the human race to hear the voice of God, and to see the appearance and work of God, so the people have turned toward God one after another. Henceforth the human race has been able to see God's omnipotence and wisdom in the words of God, has come to know the righteous disposition of God, and has seen that the words of God accomplish everything. This is the most obvious outcome achieved by the work of God incarnate. This effect could never be attained through the work of the human race, because humans do not possess truth, and are even less able to express truth to conquer and save the human race. Regardless of the method in which God works or speaks, however, regardless of how great the work done by God, or how large the number of people who turn to God, those of the satanic category must do their utmost to condemn the appearance and work of God. They also seek out various excuses to deceive people, causing people to be suspicious of God, and to deny God. The Communist Party does its utmost to deny Christ, to condemn Christ, and calls the incarnate Lord Jesus and Almighty God ordinary people. This is completely decided by the demonic essence of the Communist Party that hates truth and resists God! The Communist Party is an atheist political

party that dares even to deny God in heaven. How would it ever recognize the incarnate God?

I tell you that God incarnate, the practical God, is most plainly evident in His ability to express truth at all times and places; He can do the work of God Himself. Though by outward appearance He is an ordinary person, in fact He is the flesh worn by the Spirit of God. All of His words and work are the expression of God's Spirit. He can redeem the human race and can save the human race. He can begin new eras, and can end old eras, and ultimately bring people into God's kingdom. Without a trace of doubt, the work that the incarnate Christ does is that of God Himself; Christ is none other than the manifestation of God. Just like the incarnate Lord Jesus, though by outward appearance He is an ordinary, normal person, He brought the way of "**Repent: for the kingdom of heaven is at hand**," and accomplished the work of redeeming the human race. He also performed many miracles and wonders, for example, the five loaves and two fish feeding five thousand people. With one utterance, He calmed the wind and sea. He brought a dead person back to life, etc. The truth that the Lord Jesus spoke and the wonders and miracles He performed could not have been done by any person. This makes God's authority and power completely evident, and is sufficient to prove that the Lord Jesus was God incarnate, and was the Redeemer of the human race. However, the leaders of Judaism at the time well knew that the words and work of the Lord Jesus had authority and power, and could not have been achieved by a person. Yet they cast judgment upon the Lord Jesus and condemned Him, saying that the Lord Jesus was a human being, saying that He was speaking blasphemy, and was using the ruler of the demons to cast out

demons. With this they deceived people, and caused people to deny the Lord Jesus, who was God incarnate. This completely makes evident their satanic nature that resisted God and hated truth. During the current time, religious circles generally acknowledge that the Lord Jesus was Christ, and was God incarnate. It is only the devils who belong to Satan who deny and condemn God incarnate. The Communist Party does its utmost to deny Christ, to condemn Christ, and calls the incarnate Christ an ordinary human, labels Christian churches as cult organizations, wildly suppressing and banning them. Isn't the Chinese Communist Party thoroughly evil and reactionary? Are they not satanic demons who resist God and deny God?

God's incarnation as Christ is mainly for the purpose of expressing truth to accomplish the work of salvation. You do not acknowledge that the words of Christ are all truth, of course you would deny Christ, and even condemn Christ. Only the people who acknowledge, accept, and submit to Christ are able to attain truth and to attain salvation by God. Almighty God of the last days has expressed all truth that purifies, and saves the human race. Almighty God is the same as the Lord Jesus; from the outside He appears to be an ordinary person, yet He really is the Spirit of God in human form. In substance He is God, and can express truth and do the work that God Himself would do. Almighty God has revealed the truth of man's corruption, has even explained very clearly how Satan has corrupted the human race, and has exhaustively explained God's requirements of man, and the truth that they ought to have. Almighty God has pointed out a bright path for the human race, asking humans to be honest people, and to live by God's word. Only in this way can God's

blessing and a wonderful destination be attained. After we accepted Almighty God, experienced the work of God, and became clear about many truths, throwing off much unrighteousness, and getting far away from wicked conduct, we have all attained varying degrees of purification and change. We all therefore have a foundation for living; we all have correct goals for human life, and glorious prospects. This is completely the outcome achieved by the words of Almighty God on humans. This is sufficient proof that the words of Almighty God are truth that can purify the human race and save the human race, can cause people to cast away their satanic disposition and avoid the bondage of Satan's influence, and can bring people to a wonderful destination. Please tell me, who, aside from God, could express these truths? Who could solve the root cause of people's sins, and thoroughly save the human race from the fetters of sin? And, who could bring the human race into a wonderful destination? Other than God Himself, there is no one who has this authority or this power. Other than the incarnate Christ, there is no person who can express truth. This is factual. The truths that Almighty God has expressed are sufficient to prove the Almighty God is none other than God incarnate. Almighty God is the appearance of the Savior Christ of the last days.

You deny and condemn God incarnate like this, have you read the words of Almighty God? Have you investigated the work of Almighty God? If you have not investigated it, I suggest that you best not deny Christ in this way, even less should you declare Christ guilty. If you don't object, I can fellowship with you some passages of Almighty God's words. Almighty God says, "**He who is God incarnate shall possess the essence of God, and He who is**

God incarnate shall possess the expression of God. Since God becomes flesh, He shall bring forth the work He intends to do, and since God becomes flesh, He shall express what He is, and shall be able to bring the truth to man, bestow life upon him, and point the way for him. Flesh that does not have the essence of God is decidedly not the incarnate God; of this there is no doubt. If man intends to inquire into whether it is God's incarnate flesh, then he must corroborate this from the disposition He expresses and the words He speaks. Which is to say, to corroborate whether or not it is God's incarnate flesh, and whether or not it is the true way, one must discriminate on the basis of His essence. And so, in determining whether it is the flesh of God incarnate, the key lies in His essence (His work, His utterances, His disposition, and many other aspects), rather than external appearance" (Preface to The Word Appears in the Flesh). "**Christ comes during the last days so that all those who truly believe in Him may be provided with life. His work is for the sake of concluding the old age and entering the new one, and His work is the path that must be taken by all those who would enter the new age. If you are incapable of acknowledging Him, and instead condemn, blaspheme, or even persecute Him, then you are bound to burn for eternity and shall never enter the kingdom of God. For this Christ is Himself the expression of the Holy Spirit, the expression of God, the One whom God has entrusted to do His work on earth. And so I say that if you cannot accept all that is done by Christ of the last**

days, then you blaspheme the Holy Spirit. The retribution to be had by those who blaspheme the Holy Spirit is self-evident to all. I also tell you that if you resist Christ of the last days, if you spurn Christ of the last days, there will be no one else to bear the consequences on your behalf. Furthermore, from this day onward you will not have another chance to gain the approval of God; even if you try to redeem yourself, you will never again behold the face of God. For what you resist is not a man, what you spurn is not some puny being, but Christ. Do you know what the consequences of this will be? You will not have made a small mistake, but committed a heinous crime. And so I advise everyone not to bare your fangs before the truth, or make careless criticisms, for only the truth can bring you life, and nothing except the truth can allow you to be reborn and behold the face of God again" ("Only Christ of the Last Days Can Give Man the Way of Eternal Life" in The Word Appears in the Flesh). The words of Almighty God explain the substance of Christ very clearly. We who believe in Almighty God have all read a great deal of the words of Almighty God. For this reason only are we able to understand the truth concerning God's incarnation, and have accepted the last-days work of Almighty God. If there is no understanding of truth, it is often easy to have notions about the work of God, and even to judge it and condemn it. If one is able to pursue truth, and read a lot of Almighty God's words, it assures that they will not say words to condemn or resist God. we hope that you will not say any more words that deny God or that deny God incarnate, lest you offend God.

Excerpted from the movie script of The Lies of Communism

Question 17: You bear witness that Almighty God is God of the last days appearing and working, and you say that your belief in Almighty God is seeking truth, and walking the correct path of life. From what I know, however, many of the people who believe in Almighty God are like those missionaries of Jesus, who for the purpose of spreading the gospel and bearing God's witness, did not hesitate to abandon family and career, and gave body and soul for God. Among them there are many young people who don't get married, all doing their duty in following Christ of the last days. What I am saying is all true, isn't it? Perhaps you are not aware that, because of you leaving family and work to spread the gospel and bear God’s witness, there are ever greater numbers of people who believe in God. If the whole human race turned toward God, who would still believe in the Communist Party, and follow the Communist Party? Precisely because of this, the government suppresses and arrests you. Can there be anything wrong with this? Mainly it is because you believe in God in this way that so many people have been arrested and sentenced to jail, and that so many people have to leave home and flee. So many husbands and wives have divorced, and so many children have no parents to love them. There are so many elders who have no one to care for them. By believing in God this way, you have caused your families to suffer such hardship. What are you trying to achieve? Could it be that this is the very correct path for human life of which you talk? Our traditional Chinese culture attaches most importance to filial piety. The saying goes: “Of all virtues filial piety is most important.” Confucius said: “While your parents are alive, don't travel far away.” Showing respect to parents is the foundation of human conduct. Believing in God, and following God the way that

you do, unable to care for even the parents who gave you life and nurtured you, how can this be considered a correct path for human life? I often hear people say that believers are all good people. This is not false. But all of you believe in God, worship God, and venerate God as great. This has caused the Communist Party to burn with anger, and to be full of hatred. You do your duty to spread the gospel, yet you can't even take care of your own families. How can this be considered good conduct? What do you say, could it be that even this does not show that you have taken a wrong path in belief in God? By spreading the gospel and bearing God's witness in this way, aren't you destroying the harmony and stability of society? I plead with you to not persist in error. You should return to society as soon as possible, reunite with your families, live normal lives, and take care of your families well. You should do your duties as children and as parents. Only this is the foundation for human conduct; only this is the most practical.

Answer: You repeat over and over again that we have gone the wrong way by leaving our families and careers to believe in God and do our duty to spread the gospel. What you say is wrong. As an atheist, can you explain clearly what the right course for human life really is? Can you see through to the origin of the darkness and evil in the world? Can you see why the human race lives in sin, and why it struggles in sin? Can it be that greed for enjoyment of sinful pleasures is happiness? Now God incarnate has come to save the human race from sin, and has led the human race into the light, leading them into a wonderful destination. This is great and wonderful news for a corrupt human race! We are all human beings who have been corrupted by Satan We all should accept the work of

God, and accept all the truths that God expresses. Only in this way can we attain purity, receive salvation, and gain a wonderful destination. Only this is the right, proper, and correct path of human life. How can you say that this is going the wrong path? According to your point of view, the disciples of the Lord Jesus who left their homes and work to follow and bear witness for the Lord, can it be that they were going the wrong path? Those missionaries of the West who left their dear ones and native land to travel far across the sea to China devoted their life's energy to preaching and bearing witness for the salvation of the Lord Jesus, some of them even losing their lives for it, are you saying that they were ruthless? They were carrying out God's will in order to help people attain God's salvation. What they did were benevolent actions; it was the most righteous of all human causes, completely in keeping with God's will. The Lord Jesus said, "**If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brothers, and sisters, yes, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple**" (Luk 14:26). "**And he that takes not his cross, and follows after me, is not worthy of me**" (Mat 10:38). Over the past two thousand years, countless Christians have left their families and work to comply with God's wishes, to spread God's gospel and bear God's witness. It is precisely their unrepentant efforts that has caused the salvation of the Lord Jesus to spread to all corners of the earth. Today the Lord Jesus has returned as Almighty God, and expresses truth to do the last-days judgment work to purify and save the human race. The Christians of The Church of Almighty God, in order to help more people have a chance to hear the words of God, to accept God's last-days purification and salvation, and to enter into

the wonderful destination that God has prepared for the human race, have left behind their families and work, and do all they can to preach and bear witness for the appearance and work of Savior Christ of the last days. Could this be wrong? This is completely in accord with the Bible, and in accord with God's requirements!

You say that the reason that the homes of many Christians fall apart is because the believers put aside family and career to spread the gospel. Is this really how it is? Everyone knows that since the CCP came to power they have persecuted religious belief, labeled Christianity a cult, and labeled the Holy Bible a cult book. They have wildly arrested and persecuted people who believe in God, which has led to countless Christians being put in jail, and countless Christians being maimed and killed. Who is really destroying families? Who is it that forces Christians to be unable to return home, breaks up their families, and separates their family members? Isn't this whole tragedy caused by the Communist Party wildly persecuting Christians? When Christians in western democratic countries put aside family and career to spread the gospel and bear God's witness, why is it that their families are not broken up? What is going on here? Why is it that in China, where the Communist Party rules, believing in God and spreading the gospel has become a grave crime? What country would have law like this? What kind of ruling party is this? I used to have a harmonious family, but Chinese Communist police learned that I was a believer, and came after me everywhere to arrest me. All I could do was flee. But the police would not let my family members be. Not only did the police keep watch on my home, and wire-tap our telephone, they even went to my daughter's school to stake out for my arrest, saying that by believing in God I was a

political criminal. Because of all this, the teachers and students discriminated against my daughter, who ultimately was persuaded forcibly to quit school. That year my daughter was only 14 years old. How many times I thought of my child, and missed my parents, but did not dare to phone them for even a word! I passed my hometown so many times, but all I could do was look from afar, not daring to go home. The right to see my parents and child for even a moment was stripped away. Because of a warrant for my arrest, my husband's work was implicated, and finally he divorced me. My family was torn to pieces. Ultimately whom is to blame? There is no one to care for my child and my parents. Who really is the arch-criminal? Isn't it the Chinese Communist government? The Communist Party does whatever it takes to arrest and persecute believers, stripping away the right of believers to exist. They will not let up even on the family members of Christians. This is an intolerable injustice! The path that we believers walk is a correct path. Why does the Communist Party always tyrannize us and abuse us? Could it be that this is the "greatness, glory, and rectitude" of the Communist Party? The Communist Party wildly arrests and persecutes people who believe in God, which has led to the split of countless Christian families. Finally they make an unfounded countercharge, and say that the cause of every disaster is people believing in God, and say that Christians disrupt public order. Isn't the Communist Party blatantly distorting the facts and confusing truth and falsehood? This really is so shameless!

Excerpted from the movie script of The Lies of Communism

THE CHURCH OF ALMIGHTY GOD

Gospel Website

https://www.holyspiritspeaks.org

Our Website

App Download

YouTube: https://l.kingdomsalvation.org/en/video

Facebook: https://l.kingdomsalvation.org/en/facebook

Email: info@almightygod.church